

# Corruptions of Christianity: Catholicism

Read this article online here:  
<http://creationliberty.com/articles/religioncatholic.php>

Author: Christopher J. E. Johnson  
Updated: October 4, 2021

There's also free full teaching MP3's available at <http://creationliberty.com/audio.php>

## *Contents:*

[Introduction](#)  
[Chapter 1 - Catholic History: A Pagan Foundation](#)  
[Chapter 2 - Purgatory: The Imaginary Safety Net](#)  
[Chapter 3 - Mass/Eucharist: Never-Ending Blood Sacrifices](#)  
[Chapter 4 - Indulgences: Bonus Points for Heaven](#)  
[Chapter 5 - Working For Grace: A Deadly Oxymoron](#)  
[Chapter 6 - Idolatry: The Goddess Called 'Mary'](#)  
[Chapter 7 - The Pope: Throne of an Antichrist](#)  
[Chapter 8 - Catholic Inquisition: The Result of Papal Rule](#)  
[Chapter 9 - Nuns: The Brides of Satan](#)  
[Chapter 10 - Priests and Sexual Abuse](#)  
[Chapter 11 - The Great Whore of the Scarlet Beast](#)  
[Chapter 12 - A Final Message for Catholics](#)

## Introduction

I had two main purposes for writing this book. The first is so that my brethren, who are born again in the Lord Jesus Christ, would gain understanding and discernment, to know the difference between the Word of God versus the deceptive religious practices of this world.

The second purpose of this book is to warn Catholics. I am aware that very few Catholics would ever pick up this book just based on the title, let alone would they open up to the first page to read it, but if by the grace of God any practicing Catholic is reading this paragraph, I want to encourage you in the brave step you have just taken to understand the truth of Scripture because it not always easy to open your mind to learn about something that goes against everything you have been initially taught, especially if you grew up that way.

Just remember that the Lord God considers it a righteous deed to study out a matter:

*[The heart of the righteous studieth to answer: but the mouth of the wicked poureth out evil things.](#)*  
*-Proverbs 15:28*

It is the duty of Christians to expose darkness for the sake of those who are lost, that their souls might be saved on the Day of Judgment. I hope that by writing this book, there might be some Catholics who souls will be won for the Lord Jesus Christ:

*[And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.](#)*  
*-Ephesians 5:11*

*[The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life; and he that winneth souls is wise.](#)*  
*-Proverbs 11:30*

There are many people I have met over the years who call themselves "Christians," and believe Catholics are their brethren, because they believe that Catholicism is just a "branch" or "sect" of Christianity. I want to make it clear to readers that if you believe, practice, or teach according to what the Catholic Church believes, practices, and teaches, then you are not of Christ. This is not to say that a born again Christian cannot exist in the Catholic Church, but if they are of Christ, they will *NOT* remain in it very long because they will not follow after the voice of strangers:

*And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.*  
-John 10:4-5

If a man has been regenerated by the Holy Spirit, then that same Spirit will lead him out of the false doctrines of the Catholic Church. The Bible instructs born again Christians to come out from among those who walk in darkness, and not to have fellowship, companionship, communion, concord, or agreement with them:

*Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.*  
-2 Corinthians 6:14-18

I am hard pressed to find any entity in history that has been more destructive to this world, and has shed more blood of Christians, than Rome and her Catholic Church. I assure you, we will see a lot of evidence of this in later chapters of this book. Of course, practicing Catholics will be deeply disturbed by such a statement, but I say this with full confidence in Christ: Nearly all Catholics are ignorant of the truth, or more specifically, *WILLINGLY* ignorant, because the information I will present in this book is not difficult to find for those who are looking for it.

*For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.*  
-Luke 11:10

Though the information is relatively easy to find, Catholics remain in their false religious system because they do not have the Spirit of God for discernment and understanding:

*But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.*  
-1 Corinthians 2:14

For most Catholics, I would call them to repentance, which is grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing; however, for some Catholics, they do tend to show a repentant attitude. The problem is that they have a worldly repentance, which means they repent towards men (i.e. like how they go to a priest for confession and to Mary for prayer), following tradition, but there is no repentance towards God in which they look to His Word for answers.

In short, Catholics typically speak honor to God and praise to Jesus, but their hearts are far from Him because they look to Catholic tradition instead of God's Word.

*This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*  
-Matthew 15:8-9

*For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.*

*-2 Corinthians 7:10*

It is not uncommon for me to take a lot of attack on my character simply because I tell the truth. I have often heard the same phrases over and over: "You are just one of those anti-Catholics! You should be more loving to the Catholics!" Why do I become someone's enemy for simply telling them the truth?

*Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?*

*-Galatians 4:16*

Many Catholics will make me into their enemy just by reading the title of this book. However, this should be no surprise, because Jesus Christ told many people the truth and most of them did not believe Him either.

*And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.*

*-John 8:45*

Sadly, very few people love Catholics enough to tell them the truth because they fear the outburst of Catholics more than they fear God. Most people could not care less if a Catholic dies in their sin and ends up in hell and the lake of fire, but I care enough about them to spend the countless hours I have put into this book to share with them the truth of the Word of God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*

*-John 8:32*

*Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.*

*-John 17:17*

*And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.*

*-2 Thessalonians 2:10*

Whether a Catholic is willing to read and understand these things is not my responsibility; my job is only to provide the information, and if they do not want to hear it, I will bid them a pleasant day and move on. The Lord Jesus Christ does not force anyone to hear. To love God is to keep his commandments, and if we are to love our Catholic neighbors, then we ought to tell them the truth that they might be saved from hellfire.

*If ye love me, keep my commandments.*

*-John 14:15*

*Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.*

*-Matthew 28:19-20*

In this book, we will demonstrate that, despite what the public general believes, most of what the Catholic Church teaches is in direct opposition against Jesus Christ. This is not my opinion or conjecture, as Catholics often claim in my encounters with them, but rather, this is documented fact, and as you read through this book, you will find that I quote directly from Vatican sources and the Word of God, providing references to both so you can look them up and discern the truth for yourself.

*But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.*

*-Hebrews 5:14*

If Catholics will not listen to me when I teach them the truth, that the Catholic Church opposes the Bible at every turn, then perhaps they would be willing to hear a former 23-year veteran Catholic priest who came to repentance (i.e. godly sorrow of wrongdoing) and faith to be born again in Christ. He explains that priests are not learning the doctrines of the Bible, but rather, they learn the doctrines of pagan philosophers, and their becomes their foundation of faith instead of God's Word:

### Ex-Catholic Priest (23 Yrs) Richard Bennett

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=f8eylzmDp04>

**RICHARD BENNETT:** *"I also had bought, before I went into the monastery, a Bible. I thought we were going to study the Bible. I spent three pounds sterling buying a Bible, and I thought this is where we were really going to spend our time. I found that the first year was all rituals, devotions... we did all these religious exercises, but we didn't study Scripture. And then, we did start to study intently every day in the second year, but it was the philosophy of Aristotle, a pagan 300 years before Christ. To this day, priests are still trained in the philosophy of Greece. And then, we studied all the philosophies of the world. Then we started, after that, four years of theology of the famous Thomas Aquinas. We did study the introduction to some of the books of the Bible, but always under the authority of the [Catholic] Church. So it was not anything to do with the Word; it was to do with Catholicism."*

This is just one example, and we will see many more examples like that in this book. According to this former priest, Catholic priests are not trained in the Word of God; rather, they follow after pagan philosophers, learning the traditions and doctrines of men, and absorbing the rudiments (i.e. first teachings) of the world.

*Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy [a way of thinking] and vain deceit [lies] , after the tradition of men, after the rudiments [first teachings] of the world, and not after Christ.*

*-Colossians 2:8*

In this book, I will show readers *WHY* they do not train priests to study the Word of God, and why most Catholics (including many priests, nuns, and bishops) do not have much understanding of what is in the Bible. If you have never studied this topic before, the answers may surprise you, so prepare yourself. Let's begin by looking at a brief overview of the history of the Catholic Church so we can understand the foundation of the world's largest and most deceptive religious cult.

# #1 – Catholic History: A Pagan Foundation

The Catholic Church has long claimed that their religious institution began with Jesus Christ and His Apostles, as Britannica Encyclopedia states:

*"The Roman Catholic Church traces its history to Jesus Christ and the Apostles."*

-Francis C. Oakley & Jaroslav J. Pelikan, "Roman Catholicism," *Britannica Encyclopedia*, retrieved Nov 16, 2017, [britannica.com/topic/Roman-Catholicism]

Notice that Britannica Encyclopedia did not state it as a verifiable fact, but rather, they said the Catholic Church traces its history back to Christ, and that is because, despite what many people might believe, the Catholic Church does not have evidence of that history. It is nothing more than their claim to that narrative. If you continue to read Britannica's article, they go on to give more specific details, but before I even read it, I knew what they were going to do: Since Catholicism claims its beginnings to be with the apostles in the first century, what they would likely do is bring up the book of Acts to start off Catholicism's supposed "origins," then skip 300 years without any history, and that is exactly what they did because that is exactly how the Catholic Church tells the story, which is not "tracing" anything; it is only conjecture. (i.e. Conjecture is just a guess based on feelings and/or opinions without facts, evidence, and proof.)

To save a lot of reading, I am going to summarize the general claims of the Catholic Church about their history. However, before I do that, I want readers to keep in mind that this is a Catholic *CLAIM* to their history, which is made under false pretenses; meaning that none of this has evidence to support it, nor does it have anything to do with Christ's church.

The general claim of the Catholic Church is that Peter, an apostle of Christ, was the first Pope, or head authority over the Church, and he instituted its structure in the early days after Christ. About 300 years later, the Christians were persecuted because Rome had declared Christianity illegal, and some organization was needed to be established to win over Rome's approval. In addition, the Christians of that day wanted to make some sort of "New Jerusalem" for Christianity in the Roman Empire, so the Roman Emperor Constantine happened to convert to Christianity about the same time, legalizing Christianity in Rome, and became the new Pope. This all sounds light-hearted and pleasant, but **it is a fanciful LIE because numerous details of actual history are removed from Catholic textbooks, and the average Catholic has no idea they are deceived.**

Though Catholics claim their origins started with Christ, in reality, the origin of Catholicism started in 312 AD with a Roman leader named Constantine I, his involvement in the Battle of Milvian Bridge, and his use of a pagan symbol that is known today as the "labarum." The battle was a war between Constantine and Maxentius, who fought over the title of Roman Emperor, but before the battle began, Constantine claimed to have had a vision that led him to believe he was under divine protection, but in order for his army to gain that same protection, he needed to put a special symbol on the shields of his soldiers to gain this power.

Before we go any further, it should be noted that this is enough evidence for us to see that this was not of Christ. There is no place in Scripture where Jesus ever instructed His disciples that He would come to their aid if they used icons and symbols.

If you meet Catholics that speak of this event, they will repeat a general narrative that Constantine used a cross symbol, like that which Christ was crucified upon, which supposedly came from Constantine's vision. In fact, the corrupt news publication *Christianity Today Magazine* reports on this:

*"In October 312, Constantine and his forces marched toward Rome. Arrayed against them were the armies of Maxentius—four times greater. At stake was control of Rome and sole rule of the Western Empire. According to Christian historian Eusebius, the troubled Constantine sought help in prayer to his father's god. Constantine then had a vision of a cross of light emblazoned [overtly displayed] against the sun and saw the words In hoc signo vinces: 'In this sign you will win.'... The emblem [symbol] was thought of as incorporating a cross... Constantine incontrovertibly [without a doubt] adopted it as a token of his Christian allegiance."*

-David F. Wright, "Constantine's Famous Emblem," *Christianity Today*, retrieved Mar 15, 2018, [christianitytoday.com/history/issues/issue-27/constantines-famous-emblem.html]

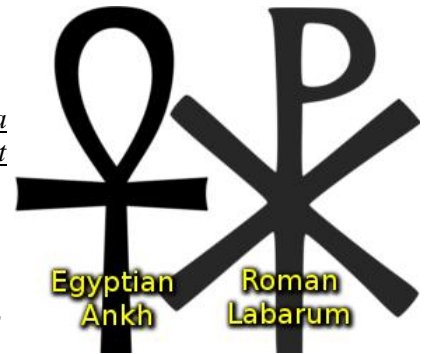
Constantine's father, Constantius Chlous, was a pagan, and so Constantine was raised up in paganism, and believed in pagan lore. Constantine was calling on pagan gods in this story, not the Christian God of the Bible. Constantine later tried to say that his father was a Christian, but the great persecution by Rome against the Christians started in 303, *AFTER* Constantius Chlous's military victory over the Carpians and Germania, which means, according to the timeline, Constantine's father would have supposedly declared himself to be a "Christian," and then started hunting and slaughtering Christians after his alleged "conversion," which makes no sense.

In short, the story has a lot of holes,  
and it gets worse as it goes.

Constantine's personal advisor, Lactantius, documented more details about this symbol:

*"Constantine was directed in a dream to cause the heavenly sign to be delineated [precisely drawn] on the shields of his soldiers, and so to proceed to battle. He did as he had been commanded, and he marked on their shields the letter X, with a perpendicular line [90° angle to a given line] drawn through it and turned round thus at the top, being the cipher of Christ... [Maxentius] went to the field. The bridge in his rear was broken down. At sight of that the battle grew hotter. The hand of the Lord prevailed, and the forces of Maxentius were routed. He fled towards the broken bridge; but the multitude pressing on him, he was driven headlong into the Tiber."*

*-Ernest C. Richardson & Bernhard Pick, The Ante-Nicene Fathers: Translations of the Writings of the Fathers Down to A.D. 325, C. Scribner's Sons, Vol. 7, 1905, p. 318, [Princeton University]*



The "Tiber" refers to the Tiber river, where Constantine's enemies drowned. Maxentius's body was later recovered, Constantine decapitated Maxentius's head, and then paraded it around the city in a victory parade. Constantine's vision was later claimed to be from the Christian God of the Bible, and that this symbol was from God, but the Bible tells us that is a lie:

*Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent:*  
-Acts 17:29-30

This includes even the very cross symbol that is plastered around almost every church building, along with necklaces, statues, tattoos, etc. Also, the so-called "Jesus fish" is pagan in its origin, and does not represent God, Christ, or Christianity in any way. To "wink" means that God is closing His eyes to the people who use these symbols, and I would exhort born again Christians to repent and get rid of their idols.

(Read "[Christian Symbols Are Not Christian](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The explanation given by the Catholic Church for why Constantine chose the "labarum" symbol is not even close to why it was originally crafted. It was not only designed after the Egyptian ankh (*crux ansata*, which means "cross with a handle"), which is commonly used in paganism to represent gods and goddesses of the afterlife (which is why it is so commonly associated with mummies), but the labarum is also designed after a symbol of a Persian god:

***"LABARUM: Emblem of the Persian god Mithra, derived from the Egyptian ankh, painted on the shield of the emperor Constantine for the purpose of encouraging his Mithra-worshipping soldiers to believe they were fighting for their god. Because the labarum resembled the Greek letters khi and rho superimposed on each other, and khi and rho were the first two letters of khristos, it was later claimed by the Christians that Constantine had triumphed under a Christian symbol. In fact Constantine did not declare himself a Christian until much later."***

*-William Harwood, Dictionary of Contemporary Mythology: Third Edition (2011), World Audience Inc, 2017, p. 284, ISBN: 9781544601403*

Soldiers at this time already commonly worshipped Mithra, so before we continue, I would like to propose my theory of what actually happened: The odds of winning this war were heavily in favor of Maxentius because his armies was four times larger than Constantine's army, and under those circumstances of low-morale, it becomes very difficult to keep soldiers from abandoning their duties and fleeing the battlefield because they know that, even if they do not die on the battlefield, this was a war to see who would become the next Emperor of Rome, and that means the losing army would be executed by the new emperor. So to prevent his soldiers from fleeing, Constantine claims he had a "vision" in a dream, and the vision instructed him to use a symbol that, miraculously, just so happened to be attributed to the god most of them worshiped, and thus, they would believe that they would be under divine protection as they marched into battle, which would boost morale.

After Constantine got his soldiers onto the battlefield with their morale boosted, he burned the bridge behind them, so none of his soldiers could run away. Then, if he won, the people would see Constantine as divine, believing he is a god himself, and that will be important later (in chapter seven) when we find out that the Pope of Rome is considered by the Catholic Church to be a god.

It was not until about a decade after this battle that Constantine declared himself to be a "Christian," which leads us to question if the events of this battle were supposed to be the crux (pun-intended) for his conversion. Why did it take Constantine so long to declare his "Christian" status? As we just read, Constantine did not "convert" to Christianity until many years after this battle, so why is this battle connected to his alleged conversion? That is food for thought. Nevertheless, what Constantine did is called idolatry, which is a practice of heathens/pagans, and has nothing to do with the Lord Jesus Christ and His church.

(Read "[The Biblical Understanding of Idolatry](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*Ye shall make you no idols nor graven image, neither rear you up a standing image, neither shall ye set up any image of stone in your land, to bow down unto it: for I am the LORD your God.*

*-Leviticus 26:1*

Mithra, or Mithras, was a Roman god that was popular in the Roman military in the days of Constantine. Looking at the images below, you can see how Constantine altered the ankh with Greek letters, then attached it to a Mithras-like symbol, and during his reign as Emperor of Rome, he had the symbol printed on Roman currency.



In case anyone did not recognize it, the Mithras symbol is also where we get the "medical" (caduceus) symbol commonly found in the U.S. today. Even the commonly sworn "Hippocratic Oath" was originally sworn to pagan gods and goddesses, but those pagan gods were removed from the oath to "Americanize" it. This helps demonstrate the true origins behind modern-day "medicine," and it is one of the many reasons why modern "medical science" doctors, alongside the pharmaceutical industry, are killing more people than they're helping.

(Read "[The Cure for Cancer](#)," "[The United Vaccin-Nations](#)," and "[Psychology: Hoodwinked by the Devil](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details; the word *pharmakeia*, where we get the root word for pharmaceutical, literally means "sorcery.")

Because the symbol Constantine used formed Greek letters that spelled out the Greek word for "anointed," or "christ," (i.e. *khi+rho = khristos*) therefore, the heathen who followed Constantine claimed in ignorance that it was the Christian God of the Bible who gave him the vision for the pagan symbol. It is claimed that this led to Constantine's conversion to "Christianity," but there is no solid evidence of this; rather, it seems he was guided down that path by some influential people around him, and later on in his life, he eventually claimed to be Christian.

There is also a misconception that Constantine legalized Christianity, but that is not the case because he was only a co-regent (joint ruler) at the time of his victory over Maxentius. The plan was brought to the current Emperor Galerius in 311 AD by Licinius and Constantine, and it was Galerius that allowed the practice of Christianity, better known as the *Edict of Toleration*. The edict only stated that Christians would be tolerated, or allowed to practice, but they were not endorsed by Rome like all the other pagan religions, and without endorsement, Roman governors would not have been allowed to be Christians. This makes much more sense because it would have been a crime for Constantine to claim Christian revelation while he battled for the title of Emperor of Rome in 312 AD, which would mean he would have been acting against Roman law, and it would not have looked good on his claim to the throne. (i.e. If he really were of Christ, that would not have stopped him, but this was all a political game.)

(See John Horsch, *A Short History of Christianity*, self-published, 1903, p. 46, [Columbia University]; See also A. Edward Siecienski, *Constantine: Religious Faith and Imperial Policy*, Taylor & Francis, 2017, p. 32, ISBN: 9781351976121)

It is for these reasons that the true beginning of the Catholic Church started with Constantine's deceptive and demonic vision in 312 AD (i.e. it was not from God); however, because Catholicism is typically viewed in terms of organization rather than foundation (because looking at the foundation would reveal it as paganism), it is more commonly said that their origin was in 325 AD with the First Council of Nicaea. The Council of Nicaea is commonly claimed by Catholics to be the first ecumenical "Christian" organization in the history of the world.

ecumenical (adj): universal, united

(See 'ecumenical', *Random House Dictionary*, 2017, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

The problem with this claim is that, as we have already seen, Catholicism has nothing to do with the Christian God of the Bible, and everything to do with paganism and witchcraft. Catholicism's origin and its first leader were pagan from the beginning. Keep in mind that Constantine was a Roman, and one of the things Rome was most well-known for was their ecumenical nature; meaning that they sought out religions and cultures from all over the world and brought them under one umbrella, conquering as they went, which is where the phrase "all roads lead to Rome" came from.

For example, the following authors document the Rus, a culture of eastern Russia and Ukraine, who were a conversion project for the Catholics in the 12th century. Notice that their pagan beliefs did not change, but they simply added "Christian" doctrine to their paganism:





*"The pagan Rus in all probability shared the Nordic gods and beliefs common to the people of Scandinavia. Pagan Slavs worshipped Perun, the god of lightning and thunder. The Rus probably identified him with Thor, the Viking god of rain and thunder. The Rus also believed in good and evil spirits among the wood and river spirits... The conversion to Christianity [i.e. Catholicism], which happened earlier in the south closer to Constantinople and in urban areas, did not mean cessation [the stopping] of all pagan practices. Many Rus maintained a double faith, attending church [i.e. Catholic temples] yet continuing to participate in pagan festivals, such as summer solstice celebrations. With time the two faiths merged into one, as pagan mythological became identified with Christian historical figures. Perun was identified with the prophet Elijah, depicted as riding a fiery chariot."*

-Carl Waldman & Catherine Mason, *Encyclopedia of European Peoples*, Infobase Publishing, Vol. 2, 2006, p. 674, ISBN: 9781438129181

This is just one example to help demonstrate the point, and I will show more instances of this later, but the fact is that the Catholic Church has, from its very beginning, followed the tradition of Rome to adopt all pagan religions into one ecumenical (i.e. unified) organization. The practice of calling the same god or goddess by a variety of names from different cultures is a tradition witches are accustomed to:

*"When envisioning the Goddess and God, many of the Wicca see them as well-known deities from ancient religions. Diana, Pan, Isis, Hermes, Hina, Tammuz, Hecate, Ishtar, Cerridwen, Thoth, Tara, Aradia, Artemis, Pele, Apollo, Kanaloa, Bridget, Helios, Bran, Lugh, Hera, Cybele, Inanna, Maui, Ea, Athena, Lono, Marduk--the list is virtually endless. Many of these deities, with their corresponding histories, rites and mythic information furnish the concept of deity for Wiccans."*

-Scott Cunningham, *Wicca*, Llewellyn Worldwide, 2010, ISBN: 9780738717159; Cunningham practiced witchcraft for over twenty years, and even after his death in 1993, is still highly regarded as an expert in the craft.

Thus, it was not that paganism secretly infiltrated Catholicism, but rather, Catholicism was inherently pagan from the very beginning, and we will see more evidence of this in later chapters. Their goddess "Mary" is one of the many names for pagan goddesses, and Catholics have, in blasphemous manner, attributed the holy name of Jesus to their false god. Christians need to understand that when members of the Catholic Church say the name "Jesus," they are not referring to the Lord Jesus Christ of Scripture, nor when they say "Mary," are they referring to the Mary talked about in the Bible, but rather, they worship the same gods as the pagans of Rome. (The name "Mary" has become just another name for the goddess of witches, and I will demonstrate that in chapter six.)

It would take many volumes of books to talk about every aspect of political debate and religious heresy that was going on at the time the Roman Catholic Church was formed, which was the claimed purpose of forming an "ecumenical church," or in other words, they claimed a corporate church under Rome was necessary to dispel false doctrines. For example, Arianism was a belief picked up by a large number of heretics that claimed Jesus Christ was a created being, but not God Himself (which is what [Jehovah's Witnesses](#) believe today); however, for the purpose of this teaching, such political matters are meaningless because there have always been false doctrines proposed by false prophets for the past six thousand years of history. What matters is that the Council of Nicaea claimed to establish a set of beliefs that would be permanently labeled as "Christian" doctrine, but this was done under the pretense of bringing all under the authority of Rome, and as we will find out in later chapters, the path that begins in pagan idolatry only ends in death and destruction.

Though Catholics (and other heretical church organizations around the world) will typically praise the Council of Nicaea, the newly formed Catholic Church was the beginning of centuries of torture and death against those born again in Christ. (We will learn more about that in chapter eight.) The Council developed what is known as the "Nicene Creed," which states:

*"I believe in one God, the Father almighty, maker of heaven and earth, of all things visible and invisible. I believe in one Lord Jesus Christ, the Only Begotten Son of God, born of the Father before all ages. God from God, Light from Light, true God from true God, begotten, not made, consubstantial with the Father; through him all things were made. For us men and for our salvation he came down from heaven, and by the Holy Spirit was incarnate of the Virgin Mary, and became man. For our sake he was crucified under Pontius Pilate, he suffered death and was buried, and rose again on the third day in accordance with the Scriptures. He ascended into heaven and is seated at the right hand of the Father. He will come again in glory to judge the living and the dead and his kingdom will have no end. I believe in the Holy Spirit, the Lord, the giver of life, who proceeds from the Father and the Son, who with the Father and the Son is adored and glorified, who has spoken through the prophets. I believe in one, holy, catholic and apostolic Church. I confess one Baptism for the forgiveness of sins and I look forward to the resurrection of the dead and the life of the world to come. Amen."*

-*Encyclopaedia Britannica*, "Nicene Creed," retrieved Nov 17, 2017, [[britannica.com/topic/Nicene-Creed](http://britannica.com/topic/Nicene-Creed)]

Of course, if you have been born again in the Lord Jesus Christ, you may have found yourself in agreement with all of that quote. I agree with it as well. However, the problem is not profession of belief because even the devils believe these things, and those devils can transform themselves to appear to be the ministers of righteousness; rather, the problem is a lack of righteous judgment in which we look at the fullness of a man's doctrine, and the fruits he produces, to discern truth from falsehood, which means once we judge the fullness of what they say and do, we will understand the Nicene Council, just as all Catholics today, do not believe in that creed as it is written.

*Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.*  
-James 2:19

*For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.*  
-2 Corinthians 11:13-15

*Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.*  
-John 7:24

(Read "[Unbiblical Cop-Outs: Don't Judge Me!](#)" here at [creationliberty.com](http://creationliberty.com) for more details.)

judge (v): to compare facts or ideas, and perceive their agreement or disagreement, and thus to distinguish truth from falsehood

(See 'judge', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Aug 22, 2020, [[webstersdictionary1828.com](http://webstersdictionary1828.com)])

The Lord Jesus Christ warned His disciples that they should beware the leaven, which means the doctrine. The Pharisees and Sadducees all claimed to believe in the Hebrew God, just as the Catholics do today, but it was their doctrine that was dangerous:

*Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees... Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.*  
-Matthew 16:6-12

*A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.*  
-Galatians 5:9

We are supposed to cut off and void just a little bit of leaven, but the the Catholic Church is stuffed full of tons of leaven, in which they claim to be of Christ, claim to believe the virgin birth, claim to believe in His saving blood, claim to believe in the resurrection from the dead, claim to believe in the [Godhead \(Father, Son, and Holy Ghost\)](#), and everything else stated in the Nicene Creed, but they have *NOT* been born again in Christ. These people are what I typically call "false converts," or those who profess the love of God with their mouths, but their hearts are far from God.

(Read "[False Converts & Eternal Security](#)" here at [creationliberty.com](http://creationliberty.com) for more details.)

*This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me.*  
-Matthew 15:8

*Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.*  
-Matthew 7:16-17

Since the Catholic Church was founded in paganism and idolatry, we will see Catholicism produce pagan and idolatrous fruits. We will see how they will paint themselves a pleasant outward appearance when it comes to the public eye, but inwardly, they are corrupt. Typically, we are taught that the world was "Christianized" by the Catholic Church, but what really happened historically is a transformation and fusion of paganism, not a conversion to Christianity.

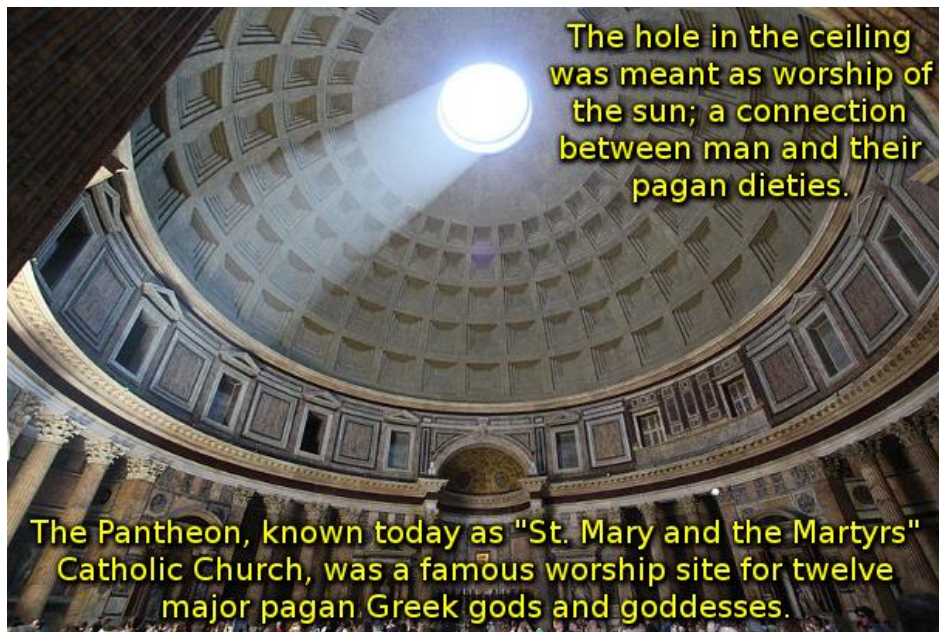
## Catholicism is nothing more than a transformation and fusion of witchcraft and idolatry.

For example, the Catholic Church has restructured, rebuilt, and renamed many famous pagan sites around the world; one of those being the city of Aphrodisias (also called Stauropolis, Caria, and Geyre), a pagan Greek city in which Aphrodite, a pagan sex goddess, was worshipped. (One can only imagine the amount of fornication and sodomy that took place in that location.) The Catholic Church took possession of this location and renamed it "City of the Cross" because they wanted it to appear "Christian" to the masses, while at the same time honoring the site because of its pagan influence; thus, the Catholic Church is famous for taking wicked abominations against God, slapping a "jesus" label on them, and call them "good."

(See Sheila D. Campbell, *The Mosaics of Aphrodisias in Caria*, PIMS, 1991, p. 33, ISBN: 9780888443670)

*Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!*

-Isaiah 5:20



One of the most famous pagan sites in the world, the Pantheon, which was dedicated to Jupiter, Apollo, Mars, Mercury, Neptune, Vulcan, Juno, Minerva, Venus, Diana, Ceres, and Vesta, was also claimed by the Catholic Church as a "holy" site. In 609, Pope Boniface IV converted it to "St. Mary and the Martyrs" Church, and it is a temple that is held sacred to Catholics.

(See J. Bell, *Bell's New Pantheon; or Historical Dictionary of the Gods, Demi-Gods, Heroes*, self-published, Vol. 1, 1790, p. 226, [New York Public Library]; See also George Weigel, *Roman Pilgrimage: The Station Churches*, Basic Books, 2013, p. 387, ISBN: 9780465027699)

The argument you may hear from the typical Catholic is that these sites were "Christianized," but not only is Catholicism not Biblical Christianity, but there is no Biblical mandate to convert worldly, pagan traditions and inventions to Jesus. All throughout the Bible, the Lord God destroyed pagan culture because it had to be cleansed; *NEVER* did He instruct the Jews or Christians to take what the pagans had created and use it for His glory.

*And the LORD spake unto Moses in the plains of Moab by Jordan near Jericho, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye are passed over Jordan into the land of Canaan; Then ye shall drive out all the inhabitants of the land from before you, and destroy all their pictures, and destroy all their molten images, and quite pluck down all their high places:*  
*-Numbers 33:50-52*

*And when the LORD thy God shall deliver them before thee; thou shalt smite them, and utterly destroy them; thou shalt make no covenant with them, nor shew mercy unto them... But thus shall ye deal with them; ye shall destroy their altars, and break down their images, and cut down their groves, and burn their graven images with fire.*  
*-Deuteronomy 7:2-5*

Do not misunderstand, these are not commandments that Christians should go around burning up other peoples' property; this was specifically commanded for the Jewish government to punish the crime of idolatry. The reason the Lord God was so strict against the Hittites, Girgashites, Amorites, Canaanites, Perizzites, Hivites, and Jebusites in those nations/cities is because they were pagans who were rampant in every sin imaginable, including fornication, sodomy (homosexuality), and the blood sacrifice of children unto devils.

(Read "[Abortion: Paganism, Satanism, Sacrifices, and Witchcraft](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.*  
*-Matthew 7:18*

There is nothing good about these filthy, unholy sites, yet the Catholic Church took them, renamed them to something more pleasing to the ear, and opened them up to the public again. This is not because the Catholic Church cleansed anything, but rather, they because they study pagan philosophy of Greece, as the aforementioned 23-year veteran ex-Catholic priest Richard Bennett pointed out in the introduction to this book. These things are done because the root of the Catholic Church's tree is the corruption of paganism, and if the root is corrupt, that makes the tree is corrupt, and so the fruit will be corrupt also.

In another example, Pope Paul VI released an official decree called *Nostra Aetate* (i.e. *In This Age of Ours*), which states clearly that other pagan religions, like Buddhism and Hinduism, are accepted in the Catholic Church, and that these other religions contain a path to perfection, illumination, and truth in philosophy:

*"Thus, in Hinduism men explore the divine mystery and express it both in the limitless riches of myth and the accurately defined insights of philosophy. They seek release from the trials of the present life by ascetical practices [i.e. religious practices of self-denial, to live in poverty], profound meditation and recourse to God in confidence and love. Buddhism in its various forms testifies to the way of life by which men can, with confidence and trust, attain a state of perfect liberation and reach supreme illumination either through their own efforts or by the aid of divine help. So, too, other religions which are found throughout the world attempt in their own ways to calm the hearts of men by outlining a program of life covering doctrine, moral precepts and sacred rites. **The Catholic Church rejects nothing of what is true and holy in these religions.**"*

-Pope Paul VI, "Declaration on the Relation of the Church to Non-Christian Religions: *Nostra Aetate*," Oct 28, 1965, retrieved July 25, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/hist\_councils/ii\_vatican\_council/documents/vat-ii\_decl\_19651028\_nostra-aetate\_en.html]

As we can see, the Catholic Church has always embraced pagan doctrines and beliefs, just as Rome did. There is nothing true or holy in these false religions with their pagan gods, but the Catholic Church, being of like-mind with their wicked doctrines, declares the heathen to be "brethren," and to that point, I would not disagree; meaning that Hinduism, Buddhism, Islam, and every other flavor of pagan doctrine in between, are all yoked together with the wicked Catholic Church under the leadership of the Devil, and we born again Christians sanctify ourselves (divide ourselves away) from them.

(Read "[Islam: Religion of Terror](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

We will see more examples in subsequent chapters that the Catholic Church has been one of the world's primary beacons of fusing paganism with so-called "Christianity," and sadly, the modern-day church buildings and churchgoers have adopted their traditions. From holidays, to ceremonies, building construction, to clergy—most of what we see in the modern "evangelical" or "protestant" church buildings denominations has been adopted from pagan Rome through the Catholic Church, but before we get to all that, I believe it is best that we start by looking at their doctrine.

(Read "[Denominations Are Unbiblical](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The purpose of this chapter was to demonstrate that the Catholic Church had a pagan root of witchcraft, and that they maintain those traditions to this day; therefore, as we will see later, it has pagan fruit of witchcraft. However, without knowing any of that, we can discern the evil of the Catholic Church by simply looking at their doctrine and comparing it with the Word of God.

## #2 – Purgatory: The Imaginary Safety Net

There are many doctrinal errors that make up the foundation of Catholicism, but the Catholic doctrine of "purgatory" is their bread-and-butter, or in other words, it is the biggest money-making scheme in the known world. Without purgatory, Catholicism would struggle to financially flourish as much as they have, and they would be hard-pressed to keep converts coming back.

*But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.*

*-1 Timothy 6:9-11*

Let's define purgatory from the New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia, which claims to have "*full and authoritative information on the entire cycle of Catholic interests, action and doctrine,*" and is approved and used by the Catholic Church today. It says:

*purgatory* (n): (Lat., "purgare", to make clean, to purify) in accordance with Catholic teaching is a place or condition of **temporal** [i.e. temporary] punishment for those who, **departing this life in God's grace**, are, not entirely free from venial faults, or **have not fully paid the satisfaction** [i.e. debt] **due to their transgressions**

(See Edward Hanna, "Purgatory," *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, Robert Appleton Company, Vol. 12, 1911, retrieved Nov 22, 2017, [newadvent.org/cathen/12575a.htm])

So in a nutshell, the grace of God is not enough to pay off the debts of the people, and purgatory is supposed to be a place where people go to work out their sins. Notice that it specifically said that even if you die with God's grace, you still have not paid off your debt. Whatever debt was accumulated through their lifetime by their transgressions against God must be fully paid, and then once the whole debt is paid, they are "cleansed," and then enter heaven.

Catholicism claims that God's grace, which is supposed to be obtained through **repentance** (i.e. **grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing**) and faith on the blood of Jesus Christ, is *NOT* enough to pay the debt of sin, and that is completely contradictory to what the Bible teaches us:

*Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.*

*-Romans 4:4-5*

*And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.*

*-Romans 11:6*

grace (n): favor; good will; kindness; the **free** unmerited love and favor of God

(See 'grace', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Mar 15, 2018,[webstersdictionary1828.com])

In Romans, Paul is explaining that grace and works cannot exist together to pay the debt of sin. If God has granted you his unmerited (i.e. undeserved) love, then it is impossible that works could add to that. Either you are under grace, which is salvation to eternal life, or you are under works, which is death and hell, but the Catholic Church believes something entirely different than what God's Word tells us.

In short, the Bible teaches us it is not possible to have God's grace for your sins, but then be required to also work/suffer for those sins; it is one or the other, but it cannot be both.

When discussing the doctrine of Scripture, I would normally take readers to the section of the Bible that talks about the subject, but in this case, there is no Scriptural backing for purgatory; or in other words, the Catholic Church is not getting this idea from any known verse of Scripture. There is nowhere in the Bible that even remotely mentions such an idea as purgatory, but oddly enough, the Council of Trent (the 19th ecumenical meeting of Catholic leaders to determine official doctrine of their Church) in 1545 claimed that there was Scriptural backing for purgatory:

*"Whereas the Catholic Church, instructed by the Holy Ghost, has from the Sacred Scriptures and the ancient tradition of the Fathers taught in Councils and very recently in this General Council that there is a Purgatory, and that the souls therein detained are helped by the suffrages [series of prayers] of the Faithful, but principally by the acceptable Sacrifice of the altar; the Holy Synod [governing body] enjoins on the Bishops that they diligently endeavor to have the sound doctrine of the Fathers in Councils regarding Purgatory everywhere taught and preached, held and believed by the Faithful."*

-Council of Trent, Session XXV, quoted by Francis J. Ripley, *This Is the Faith: A Complete Explanation of the Catholic Faith*, TAN Books, 1999, ISBN: 9781618901613; Ripley was a life-long Catholic and Jesuit priest.

There are a number of lies here, the first being that the "Holy Ghost" is giving them this doctrine, because if it was from the Holy Ghost, it would have been given to John, Luke, Peter, Matthew, Paul, Mark, and all the other apostles in the early days of Christ's church. The second lie is that the Scripture teaches it because, as I already stated, this is nowhere to be found, but there is one point where they actually told the truth, namely, that the "*ancient tradition of the [Catholic] Fathers*" taught it, and that is the only place you will find the doctrine of purgatory.

There is a popular Catholic magazine called *Catholic Answers*, which is officially approved by bishops of the Catholic Church, that says the question of purgatory is one of the "*most common single question[s]*" they receive at conferences and via email, so Catholic author Tim Staples (priest and graduate of theology at Mount St. Mary's Seminary in Maryland) attempts to answer it. He first states what the Catechism of the Catholic Church (official manual/rulebook of the Catholic Church) says about purgatory, so let's read it from the Vatican website:

*"All who die in God's grace and friendship, but still imperfectly purified, are indeed assured of their eternal salvation; but after death they undergo purification, so as to achieve the holiness necessary to enter the joy of heaven."*

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "III. The Final Purification, or Purgatory: 1030," retrieved Nov 22, 2017, [vatican.va/archive/ccc\_css/archive/catechism/p123a12.htm]

After reading this quote, I have a question: How do you know if you are in God's grace and friendship? After thoroughly researching Catholicism, it seems that Catholics cannot figure that out either, which is why *Catholic Answers* gets so many inquiries about it. Furthermore, they are presenting what is called an 'oxymoron':

**oxymoron** (n): a figure of speech by which a locution produces an incongruous, seemingly self-contradictory effect, as in "cruel kindness" or "to make haste slowly" (See 'oxymoron', *Random House Dictionary*, 2020, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

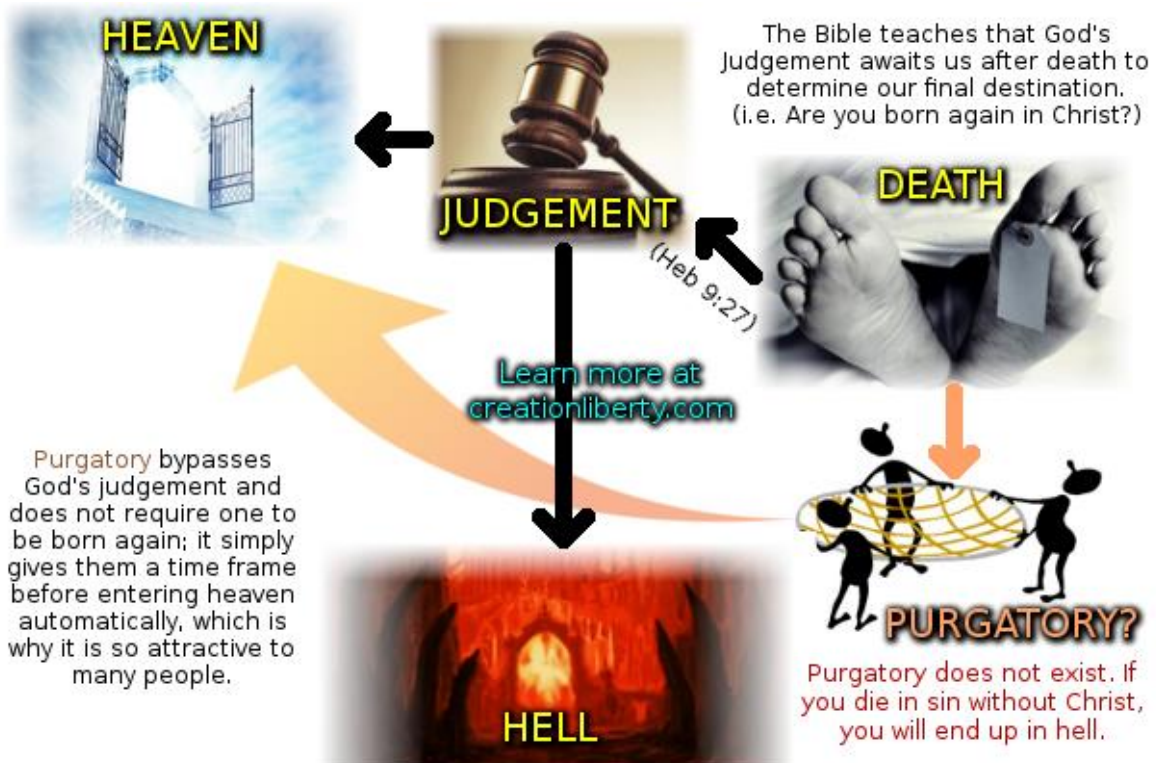
The Vatican is saying that the perfect blood of Christ is not perfect because, according to their doctrine, even if you have the blood of Christ on your account, you are still "*imperfectly purified*," which is a contradiction of the word 'pure'.

**pure** (adj): free from moral defilement; without spot; not sullied or tarnished; incorrupt

(See 'pure', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Aug 31, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

Because being 'pure' means that you are without spot, that means it is impossible to be "*imperfectly purified*" because to have one spot means that you are no longer pure. In other words, you are either purified by the blood of Christ, or you are not; there is no in between. Thus, Catholics are unable to figure out who goes to heaven and who does not, and in fact, as we will learn more later in chapter four, no one in the Catholic Church knows if the Pope himself will go to heaven or not.

The following diagram shows the difference between Biblical doctrine and Catholic doctrine:



*And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:*  
-Hebrews 9:27

Purgatory is an attractive doctrine to many people because it eliminates God's Judgment

Tim Staples of *Catholic Answers* continues to give more details:

"Scripture is very clear when it says, "But nothing unclean shall enter [heaven]" (Rev. 21:27). Hab. 1:13 says, "You [God]... are of purer eyes than to behold evil and cannot look on wrong..." How many of us will be perfectly sanctified at the time of our deaths? I dare say most of us will be in need of further purification in order to enter the gates of heaven after we die, if, please God, we die in a state of grace."

-Tim Staples, "Is Purgatory in the Bible?" *Catholic Answers*, Jan 17, 2014, retrieved Nov 23, 2017, [catholic.com/magazine/online-edition/is-purgatory-in-the-bible]

As a side note, the Catholic Church has corrupted God's Word, and they are the source of all new-age bible versions we see today. Catholics most commonly the NASV (New American Standard Version), and they have been the main source of contention over the bible version issue, and the primary contender against the pure and perfect Word of God in the King James Bible.

(Read "[Why I Use The King James Bible](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details on the history of new-age bible versions, and how all of them have a foundation in the corruptions of the Catholic Church.)

There are two general ways the word 'sanctify' is used, one means "to purify," and the other means "to set apart for a holy use," which is important to understand Staples heresy:

sanctify (v): 1. In a general sense, to cleanse, purify or make holy.  
2. To separate, set apart or apoint to a holy, sacred or religious use.

(See 'sanctify', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Aug 29, 2020, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

Therefore, in his article, Staples denied Christ because he does not believe that the blood of Jesus will purify a man. When the Lord Jesus Christ prayed in John 17, He said:

Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.  
-John 17:17-19

Jesus prayed for the same sanctification for us that He had while living as a man in this world, and that God the Father would sanctify us through His Word (not Catholic tradition). The main problem is that Staples claims to believe in the Christian God of the Bible, and on the Lord Jesus Christ, but does *NOT* believe in the power of Christ and the Holy Spirit to sanctify men, and cleanse their spirits of all unrighteousness.

If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.  
1 John 1:9

Staples does not believe in the Christ's ability to sanctify, and therefore, he cannot believe in Christ's ability to save, which means he does *NOT* believe in Jesus Christ of the Bible. Just as the Catholic Church, Staples believes in a false "christ" of tradition, one that cannot purify His flock.

Not only does the Bible tell us that God sanctifies us wholly, without the need for an imaginary safety net, the Bible also tells us that Christ sanctified us *ONCE* through His sacrifice on the cross. This means there is no need for purgatory if you are born again in Christ.

By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.  
-Hebrews 10:10

And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it.  
-1 Thessalonians 5:23-24



It is Christ that sanctifies (i.e. purifies) us, not of ourselves, but Staples' faith is in his works, and in chapter five, we will cover more details on that because the Catholic Church teaches works-based doctrine, meaning that their talk about "grace" is all for show. Notice he also said, "***IF... we die in a state of grace,***" meaning that he, as a Catholic, has no way of knowing if he, or anyone else in the Catholic Church, will die in a state of grace or not. This means that Staples believes that he has to work his way into heaven, and that brings us back to "purgatory," the place where the Catholic Church teaches you have to go to work out your sin.

After making his fallacious statements, Staples says:

***"In light of this, the truth about Purgatory is almost self-evident to Catholics."***

-Tim Staples, "Is Purgatory in the Bible?" *Catholic Answers*, Jan 17, 2014, retrieved Nov 23, 2017, [catholic.com/magazine/online-edition/is-purgatory-in-the-bible]

Interpreted, Staples is first admitting there is no evidence for purgatory, Biblical or otherwise, but then argues that Catholics should just believe it anyway. Essentially, he is arguing the *NEED* for Catholics to have purgatory, rather than providing the Scriptural evidence for it, or in other words, Staples is arguing that you must first presuppose purgatory is true, and then it will suddenly make sense. That is absurd, and I thank Mr. Staples for helping me prove my point because when he says purgatory is "self-evident," he means it 'needs no explanation'.

***self-evident*** (adj): ***evident without proof or reasoning***

(See 'self-evident', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Nov 23, 2017, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

If I were to say, "2 + 2 = 4," that can be proven in the mind without the need for outward proof or reasoning, but if I were to claim "God is a pink hippopotamus," then that would require outward proof or reasoning, and since it has to do with a spiritual subject, it would require evidence from the Word of God. Likewise, to say, "*There is a mysteriously unexplained place in the spiritual world that people have to suffer to work out their sin,*" is not something that can be evidenced in the mind without the need for outward proof or reasoning from the Word of God, which means, in a nutshell, Staples' so-called "answer" is: "*Purgatory is real. Trust in Mother Church.*"

To that, I respond: "No thank you."

***Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.***

***-Jeremiah 17:5***

However, knowing that born again Christians will mark him and point out his fallacious statements, he goes on to attempt to provide some evidence for this so-called "self-evident" belief. (Why do you need evidence if it is self-evident?) He refers to the book of Maccabees, which is an "apocryphal" book that is not the Word of God.

The word 'apocrypha' comes from the word 'apocryphal':

***apocryphal*** (adj): ***doubtful authorship or authenticity***

(See 'apocryphal', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

This is rather funny because the word 'apocrypha' literally means that no one can verify if it is true or not, but the Catholic Church automatically treats the Apocrypha as if it is the Word of God, without any concern for lies and false information. Maccabees is part of the Apocryphal books, which neither Jews nor Christians have ever accepted as part of Scripture because not only does the Apocrypha not claim itself to be God's Word (i.e. they do not say "thus saith the LORD"), but there are numerous false doctrines in those books that contradict the rest of Scripture; for example, in 2nd Maccabees, it says:

***"It is therefore a holy and wholesome thought to pray for the dead, that they may be loosed from sins."***

-2 Maccabees 12:46, *Douay-Rheims 1899 American Edition*, Bible Gateway, retrieved Nov 23, 2017, [biblegateway.com/passage/?search=2+Maccabees+12%3A46&version=DRA]

Thus, Maccabees teaches that we can be justified to enter the Kingdom of God by the works of others; meaning that someone else does the works of prayer to get you a ticket to heaven. That contradicts the Word of God:

*Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin. But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference: For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:*  
-Romans 3:20-24

The Bible teaches us that the Lord Jesus Christ is our sanctification, our saving grace, and our justification. The Bible did *NOT* say that we are sanctified by the prayers of others, and it did *NOT* say that we are justified by a Catholic flogging himself to suffer for the dead. (There are some Catholics who physically whip themselves to try and save the dead from purgatory.) It should be noted that there is nowhere in Scripture where God lays the burden of the salvation of the soul on mankind, nor is there anywhere in Scripture where God has someone pray for the dead that they would be forgiven their sin.

Staples goes on to claim that, because Maccabees says this, therefore, the practice of "praying for the dead" was done commonly in Israel. I would not argue against that point because if you read the Old Testament, most of it is rebuke against the wicked deeds of Israel, how they turned their backs on God and worshipped the gods/goddesses of the pagans, and adopted the pagan traditions, just like the Catholic Church has done, so it would make sense if Israel adopted praying for the dead.

However, Staples does not provide evidence of this because he only makes the claim, and furthermore, just because the Jews may have done something like that, does not make it Biblical. Worse still, Staples says, "*If Jesus wanted to condemn this teaching commonly taught in Israel, he was not doing a very good job of it,*" and so Staples is now blaming Christ for his own willful ignorance.

Again, the Bible addresses this matter very simply:

*And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:*  
-Hebrews 9:27

This means when a man dies, he goes straight to the Judgment of God, which means there is no purgatory. In addition, there is no place in Scripture where praying for the dead is taught, and God told the Jews quite clearly not to learn the evil ways of the heathen:

*Thus saith the LORD, Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them.*  
-Jeremiah 10:2

*And he did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, after the abominations of the heathen, whom the LORD cast out before the children of Israel.*  
-2 Kings 21:2

Israel was commanded not to go after the ways of the heathen, so even if Staples' claim was true (namely, that the Jews practice praying for the dead, which he did not provide evidence for), it would have been because Israel was turning their backs on God. After getting past all the Catholic traditions that he adores and worships, Staples then claims that Jesus taught purgatory doctrine in Matthew 5:

*Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.*  
-Matthew 5:25-26

This is the first of many examples we will see in this teaching where Catholics cherry-pick Scripture; meaning that they are selecting words, phrases, and verses taken out of their context in order to support whatever false doctrine they want to teach.

### The Problem With Ignoring Context

In Scripture, we are instructed on how to study and interpret the Bible:

*Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. [i.e. He would preach unto the Jews via the Gentiles, who spoke foreign languages they did not understand.] To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. But the word of the LORD was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken.*

-Isaiah 28:9-13

The phrase "*precept upon precept*" means that commandments must be taken in correlation with one another, the phrase "*line upon line,*" means that we must read the Scripture in its context, and the phrase "*here a little and there a little*" means that the fullness of a doctrine is going to be spread out in various places across multiple books of the Bible. The reason God had His Word written down in such a way (as opposed to an alphabetized structure with color-coded tabs) is so that false teachers who did not have the Holy Spirit of God would trip over themselves and teach false doctrine, by which we could tell the disciples of Christ apart from the wolves who seek to devour us.

The Lord Jesus Christ rebuked Satan for attempting to use Scripture out its context ([Mat 4:1-11](#)), and so we ought not to follow in the footsteps of the Devil. It is interesting to note that people generally do not read things out of context in their everyday reading, like newspapers or their beloved fiction novels, but when it comes to the Bible, most people tend to shut off their contextual reading habits because they do not like what God has to say.



For example, if one were reading George Washington's famous phrase, "*Do not fire until you see the whites of their eyes,*" one could interpret that to mean many things. Someone might think, "*Wow, what a sick, twisted, bloodthirsty man! Washington must have wanted his soldiers to look their enemies right in the face when they died!*" That is how easy it is to take something out of its context.

In context, Washington and his soldiers were low on ammo and he wanted them to conserve bullets. So to prevent them from missing their shots, he told them to hide behind cover and wait until the enemy was reasonably close enough, so they would increase their chances of landing each shot. It is easy to create strange ideas if we leave ourselves open to free-range interpretations instead of looking at the context of what is being said, and likewise, this process of ignoring the context of God's Word is the same process by which many religious cults (e.g. Catholicism) have formed their doctrines.

The Catholic Church claims that Matthew 5:26 is referring to the afterlife, and that purgatory is the prison. They believe that when you go in, you cannot come out until you pay what you owe. Let's start in verse 20 to learn the context of these verses:

*For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.*

-Matthew 5:20

The scribes and Pharisees in that day were considered to be the most holy and righteous people by the standards of men, but Jesus said that our righteousness must be better than that of the most righteous men, and the only way to exceed the righteousness of men is by relying on the purifying blood of the Lord Jesus Christ alone to enter the Kingdom of God. Despite this, Catholics do not put their trust into the Lord Jesus Christ of Scripture; instead, they put their trust into their imaginary concept of purgatory to save them.

*Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.*  
*-Matthew 5:21-24*

Jesus is talking about the law; that is why He gave examples of "Thou shalt not kill," and the punishments of the judgment in their society on them for killing. The context is the laws of their society, and the punishments for breaking those laws. The reason hellfire is mentioned is because the phrase "Thou fool" refers to a man who is so wicked in his heart that, after he has been rightly accused and convicted of a crime based on the evidence against him, he will turn to the judges and prosecutors, calling them "fools" (i.e. unreasonable men) for sentencing him based on his crimes.

The parts Jesus mentioned about bringing gifts to the altar is talking about the Old Testament traditions of Jewish society, not a secret place Catholics go to work out their sins. In context, Jesus is telling the Jews that if you have done a wrong (committed a crime) against your brother and offended him, then it would be senseless to bring your gift to God until you have righted that wrong, and that when you go to your brother in repentance (i.e. godly sorrow of wrongdoing), you need to agree with him on what he says, otherwise, he may choose to call the guards and have the judge send you to prison. A farthing is money, and that means however much you must pay (i.e. a fine) for the offense of the crime you did against your brother will be paid, and there will be no forgiveness granted until that fine is paid, which is precisely how the legal system works in almost all countries around the world, or in other words, just because you might be saved by the Lord Jesus Christ, does not mean you are relieved of your duties as a citizen under the government of the land.

(Read "[Should Christians Submit to Governing Authority?](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

There is more evidence of this context in the verses that follow: In verses 27-28, Jesus points out the law about committing adultery, in verse 31-32, Jesus points out the law about divorce, and in verse 33-34, Jesus points out the law about swearing oaths. In all these, He is pointing out what the Jews have heard in the law, and then telling them how they should live with charity and humility; thus, the man who brought his gift to the altar was humbling himself before God in repentance, but Jesus is telling him that he should not forget the man he wronged because God will not save him from a prison cell (on this earth, in society, in the flesh, not a "spiritual" prison) if he does not repent to those he has wronged.

So the typical Catholic will use these two verses, cherry-picked out their context to try and justify their belief in an imaginary spiritual limbo state where you go to work out your sins so you can get into heaven eventually, and to help soften the sufferings of purgatory, they believe that their time of punishment can be cheated if you can get someone else still alive on earth to pray, flog themselves, or in many instances, give the Catholic Church money. (We will discuss more about that in chapter four.) Again, because they do not have their faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, and instead put their faith into their own works, purgatory is their only salvation, but because it does not exist, there is no salvation for Catholics, and thus, millions and billions of Catholics have died, and will die, with their hopes in a false system that will lead them to hell.

But it is not over because Staples goes on to claim there is an even more clear text in Scripture that proves purgatory, and that is in 1 Corinthians 3:

*For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.*  
*-1 Corinthians 3:11-15*

This is typically considered the best evidence Catholics have for purgatory, but not only is this Catholic cherry-picking, it is also extreme Catholic blindness because **these verses actually *REBUKE* the doctrine of purgatory**. Let's start in verse 9:

*For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building. According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.*  
-1 Corinthians 3:9-10

In this metaphor, the building represents those of us who are born again in Christ, and the good works of God we perform are an investment in eternity. (e.g. evangelism, charity, alms, prophesying, etc; also the temple of God is the body of the born again elect—[1Co 6:19](#)) However, the Word of God points out to us that we should take caution in how we build, that is, in what works we do, because, as Paul points out in verse 11, no other foundation can be laid but in Jesus Christ.

So now that we have a context, it is easier to see the meaning of these verses, and we do not have to come up with wild theories. The works we do for the eternal Kingdom of God will be those of high value, metaphorically represented by gold, silver, and precious stones, but the works we do that are worldly are metaphorically represented by low value substances like wood, hay, and stubble. The high-value substances are metaphorically referenced because they are not destroyed by fire, but the low-value substances are destroyed by fire, therefore, whatever high-value substances are left over is how God will judge what reward we receive; meaning that those who worked righteousness by putting in the time and effort, be charitable and teaching the truth of His Word, will receive great reward, while those who did little will receive little reward.

However, *ONLY* those who have laid the foundation in Jesus Christ will be rewarded because there is no other foundation a man can lay but in Christ. That means when a Catholic, who may have done many works (like alms and charity), puts all his works into the fire, there is no foundation to put the works on, and therefore, it is the same as him never having done any good works in his life; therefore he will fall through into the very fire. When a man chooses to lay his foundation in purgatory, and teaches others to do so, there will be nothing to try by fire because there was no foundation laid in the first place, and thus, the context of 1 Corinthians 3 rebukes the false doctrine of purgatory.

Staples ends by asking a question, rather than give his so-called "Catholic answer." His question is designed to cast doubt: "*If these 'works' do not represent sins and imperfections, why would they need to be eliminated?*"

-Tim Staples, "Is Purgatory in the Bible?" *Catholic Answers*, Jan 17, 2014, retrieved Nov 23, 2017, [[catholic.com/magazine/online-edition/is-purgatory-in-the-bible](http://catholic.com/magazine/online-edition/is-purgatory-in-the-bible)]

Of course, his answer is "purgatory," but that is not a Biblical response. This is exactly the method Satan used in the Garden of Eden to trick Eve; he simply asked her questions to try and cast doubt. Staples does not want his readers to know there is a Biblical answer in the context itself. He definitely does not want them to know that those verses rebuke purgatory, and it serves as a warning that your works will not be considered at all if you have no foundation laid in the Lord Jesus Christ, meaning, it is a warning to Catholics to flee from a church that falsely calls itself "Christian," and come to the Lord Jesus Christ in His Word.

There are other problem verses that *Catholic Answers* magazine and the Catholic Church do not like to bring up when discussing this topic. For example, Jesus Christ clearly stated:

*For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.*  
-Matthew 6:14-15

So let's apply that to the doctrine of purgatory: If a Catholic dies without forgiving a man his trespasses, that means when he goes to purgatory, he would be stuck there forever. That is not a sin he can work off because God said he would not forgive it. Unless a Catholic wants to say God lied, was confuse, or that is not really God's Word, then there is no way around this verse without abandoning the doctrines of the Catholic Church.

*But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.*

*-Romans 5:8-9*

If we are justified by the blood of Christ, then we do not have to go to purgatory to be justified. This is what is called a contradiction, meaning that the Catholic teaching opposes the Word of God, and thus, you have to choose which one you will hold in faith.

*No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.*

*-Matthew 6:24*

The Bible tells us that Jesus Christ is the propitiation for our sins:

*And he [i.e. Jesus Christ] is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.*

*-1 John 2:2*

**propitiation (n): the atoning sacrifice offered to God to assuage his wrath and gain his favor**

(See 'propitiation', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Nov 23, 2017, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

Thus, we do not need a concept of purgatory to be a propitiation for our sins when we have the blood of Jesus Christ on our account. The reason Catholics need purgatory is because they do *NOT* have the blood of Jesus Christ on their accounts, and they believe they will be saved by their works of suffering in purgatory.

The Catholic Church teaches that grace must be earned by works, by the sufferings done in purgatory, but the Bible says that grace must come through faith, and not of our works:

*For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.*

*-Ephesians 2:8-9*

However, the Catholic Church tells us that anyone who does not believe in purgatory is damned to hell. The following quote is from the Council of Trent, the ecumenical authority of the Catholic Church:

*"If any one saith, that, after the grace of Justification has been received, to every penitent sinner the guilt is remitted, and the debt of eternal punishment is blotted out in such wise, that there remains not any debt of temporal punishment to be discharged either in this world, or in the next in Purgatory, before the entrance to the kingdom of heaven can be opened (to him); let him be anathema."*

-James Waterworth, *Canons and Decrees of the Sacred and Ecumenical Council of Trent*, 2003 Reprint, Kessinger Publishing, Canon #30, p. 48, ISBN: 9780766138414; See also Council of Trent, "On Justification," Canon #30, retrieved Aug 31, 2018, [thecounciloftrent.com/ch6.htm]

The common argument from Catholics is that the word "anathema" does not mean a damnation to hell. They try to put on a facade that makes people feel like the Catholic Church is a warm and fluffy religion.

**anathema (n): a person dested or loathed; accursed to damnation or destruction**

(See 'anathema', *Random House Dictionary*, 2017, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

The Catholic Church requires you to be a part of their ecumenical movement, otherwise, you do not get to go to purgatory, and therefore, you will not be able work out your sin to get to heaven. It does not take a theology degree to figure out what this means: If you are not part of the Catholic Church (i.e. to take part in the Mass, as we will see in the next chapter), then you cannot work out your sin, and if you cannot work out your sin, then you cannot go to heaven because, as Staples mentioned earlier, "nothing unclean shall enter heaven," and that means an automatic condemnation to hell. Most Catholics may not like that, but it is a fact of Catholic doctrine, and one that is rarely talked about within Catholic circles; they believe that if you do not believe in purgatory, you are an anathema, and if you are an anathema, you go to hell.

The Catechism (i.e. official rulebook) of the Catholic Church clearly states:

*"The teaching of the Church affirms the existence of hell and its eternity. Immediately after death the souls of those who die in a state of mortal sin descend into hell, where they suffer the punishments of hell, 'eternal fire.' The chief punishment of hell is eternal separation from God, in whom alone man can possess the life and happiness for which he was created and for which he longs."*

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, Part 1, Section 2, Chapter 3, Article 12, "IV Hell," Canon #1035, retrieved Mar 21, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ENG0015/\_P2O.HTM]

As we will see in the next chapter, in order to gain God's grace, you must be a part of the Catholic Church. So, to anathemize a person means they are no longer accepted within the Catholic Church, and therefore, because they are not in God's grace, they would end up in hell for eternity.

The contradiction here is that even though Catholics have no idea if they are in God's grace or not, they would quickly anathemize people like me (assuming they follow the decrees of Catholicism), but then turn around and say that atheists will end up in heaven after they spend enough time in purgatory. I know that sounds absurd, but I am not kidding; this is exactly what they teach.

(Read "[Everything You Need To Know About Atheism](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Charles Grondin, ordained priest who also writes for *Catholic Answers*, responds to the inquiry, "Can an atheist go to heaven?" He says:

*"If, however, because of circumstances a sincere person is prevented from coming to belief in God, then his lack of faith is called invincible ignorance, and such a person would not be considered culpable. [deserving of blame]"*

-Charles Grondin, "Is Purgatory in the Bible?" *Catholic Answers*, Jan 24, 2017, retrieved Nov 24, 2017, [catholic.com/qa/can-an-atheist-go-to-heaven]

We will continue with Grondin's statement in a moment, but I have paused this quote to point out that the Bible teaches the opposite of what he just said. There is no such thing as "invincible ignorance," but rather, atheists hold the truth in unrighteousness, they do not have an excuse, and become *WILLINGLY* ignorant, meaning that they do not know and they do not want to know because they hate the Christian God of the Bible.

*For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.*

*Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,*

*-Romans 1:18-22*

*Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water:*

*-2 Peter 3:3-5*

While Catholics sit around hoping that purgatory will save their atheist neighbors and family, we who are born again in Christ, knowing the terror of the Lord, and knowing what awaits an atheist in hell and the lake of fire, work to persuade them to the truth; just as we work to persuade Catholics for the same reason.

For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad. Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences.

-2 Corinthians 5:10-11

The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

-2 Peter 3:9

Grondin continues to quote Pope Pius XI to help justify his claims:

"As Pope Pius XI [1922-1939] noted in *Quanto conficiamur moerore*: 'It is known to us and to you that those who are in invincible ignorance of our most holy religion, but who observe carefully the natural law, and the precepts graven by God upon the hearts of all men, and who being disposed to obey God lead an honest and upright life [i.e. works-based doctrine], may, aided by the light of divine grace, attain to eternal life; for God who sees clearly, searches and knows the heart, the disposition, the thoughts and intentions of each, in his supreme mercy and goodness by no means permits that anyone suffer eternal punishment, who has not of his own free will fallen into sin.'"

-Charles Grondin, "Is Purgatory in the Bible?" *Catholic Answers*, Jan 24, 2017, retrieved Nov 24, 2017, [catholic.com/qa/can-an-atheist-go-to-heaven]

In short, the Catholic Church believes that atheists go to heaven so long as they do "good works" from a "sincere heart." Notice that there is no mention of the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, and that is because Catholics do not really believe in the Christian God of the Bible, rather, they believe in a different "god," and call him "jesus."

They believe that by good works, a man can enter heaven by being a righteous person, but the Bible tells us:

As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:

-Romans 3:10

For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

-Romans 3:23

He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.

-1 John 5:12

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

-John 14:6

The Bible makes it very clear that no man, save Christ Himself (who is God), has lived without sin; no man has lived righteously his whole life. The Lord Jesus Christ said specifically that He is the only way to get to God the Father. If you are a Catholic, you need to make a decision about where you stand: Either Jesus Christ is lying, or the Catholic Church is lying, and the Bible tells us which one it is:

In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began;

-Titus 1:2



## Billy Graham & Robert Schuller: Agents of the Catholic Church

Billy Graham (died 2018) and Robert Schuller (died 2015), both were huge supporters of the Catholic Church, and worked together with Catholics on a regular basis. Because of their Catholic-like beliefs, they both openly supported the Catholic ecumenical movement, and even went one step further to state that those who do not believe on the name of Jesus are still a part of Christ's church and are going to heaven.

(Read "[Wolves in Costume: Billy Graham](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

### Heretics Unite: Billy Graham & Robert Schuller

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ViLIF4NrWzA>

**SCHULLER:** "Tell me, what do you think is the future of Christianity?"

**GRAHAM:** "Well, Christianity, in being a true believer—you know, I think there's the Body of Christ, which comes from all the Christian groups around the world; or outside the Christian groups. I think everybody that loves Christ, or knows Christ, whether they're conscious of it or not, they're members of the body of Christ... And that's what God is doing today; he's calling people out of the world for his name. Whether they come from the Muslim world, or the Buddhist world, or the Christian world, or the non-believing world, they are members of the body of Christ because they've been called by God. They may not even know the name of Jesus, but they know in their heart that they need something that they don't have, and they turn to the only light that they have, and I think that they are saved and will be with us in heaven"

**SCHULLER:** "What I hear you saying is that it's possible for Jesus Christ to come into a human heart and soul and life, even if they've been born in darkness and have never had the exposure to the Bible. Is that a correct interpretation of what you're saying?"

**GRAHAM:** "Yes, it is, because I believe that..."

**SCHULLER:** "This is fantastic! I'm so thrilled to hear you say this! There's a WIDENESS in God's mercy!"

**GRAHAM:** "There is. There definitely is."

What Graham and Schuller were preaching is the doctrine of devils because God's Word tells us the wide path leads to destruction (i.e. hell):

Enter ye in at the strait gate: for **wide** is the gate, and **broad** is the way, that leadeth to **destruction**, and **many** there be which go in thereat: Because **strait** is the gate, and **narrow** is the way, which leadeth unto **life**, and **few** there be that find it.

-Matthew 7:13-14

If you are person that is attending a Catholic Church and you do not believe in purgatory, then you need to acknowledge that purgatory is a *REQUIRED* belief to be a member of the Catholic Church. You also need to acknowledge that if you choose to believe what the Bible says, the Catholic Church will condemn you the same as it condemns me and the rest of Christ's church.

Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.

-Matthew 5:11

Thus, if you are attending a Catholic Church, and do not believe in the doctrine they teach, then you need to come out from among them and be separate. This is part of the process of sanctification, meaning that you are dividing yourself from the Catholic Church in the same way that you would divide rotten fruit from good fruit.

(Read "[The Biblical Understanding of Sanctification](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

-2 Corinthians 6:14-18

Sadly, over the years, I have received many emails from Catholics trying to argue their beliefs in purgatory, claiming that the Catholic Church is the authority unto which all Christians should submit themselves, but according to the Catholic Church, I should not be receiving ANY emails from Catholic parishioners because Catholic commentary on Canon Law dictates that they have no authority to write me. Catholics are supposed to get the "Holy See's" permission to email me any disputes concerning Catholic doctrine:

"Catholics shall not enter into any disputes or conference with non-Catholics, especially public ones, without the permission of the Holy See or in urgent cases of the local ordinary [Catholic bishop]."

-Stanislaus Woywod, *The New Canon Law: A Commentary and Summary of the New Code of Canon Law*, J.F. Wagner, 1918, p. 272-273, [Ohio State University]; Woywod was a Catholic priest and his preface was written by a professor of Canon Law at a Catholic University in Washington.

Please do not misunderstand, I give thanks to the Lord God if He has led any Catholics out there to read this book, but it is important for Catholics to understand that, just like any religious cult, the Catholic Church holds a tight grip over their members. Nonetheless, I would pray that Catholics continue to read more of this book, considering carefully what it is the Catholic Church really believes, to learn why Catholics are so far from the Word of God.

## — #3 – Mass/Eucharist: Never-Ending Blood Sacrifices —

One of the most offensive practices the Catholic Church performs in direct opposition against the Lord Jesus Christ is the tradition of "transubstantiation" in what the Catholics call the "Mass." For those of you not familiar with Catholic terms, we need to make sure we understand a few words:

mass (n): the celebration of the Eucharist

(See 'mass', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

Most people have heard of a "Catholic Mass," and it is a gathering of Catholics into a religious building to participate in the celebration of what they call the "Eucharist," where they claim to "consecrate" the "sacraments" of the Eucharist.

eucharist (n): the sacrament of Holy Communion; the sacrifice of the Mass

sacrament (n): the consecrated elements of the Eucharist, especially the bread; an outward sign combined with a prescribed form of words and regarded as conferring some specific grace upon those who receive it

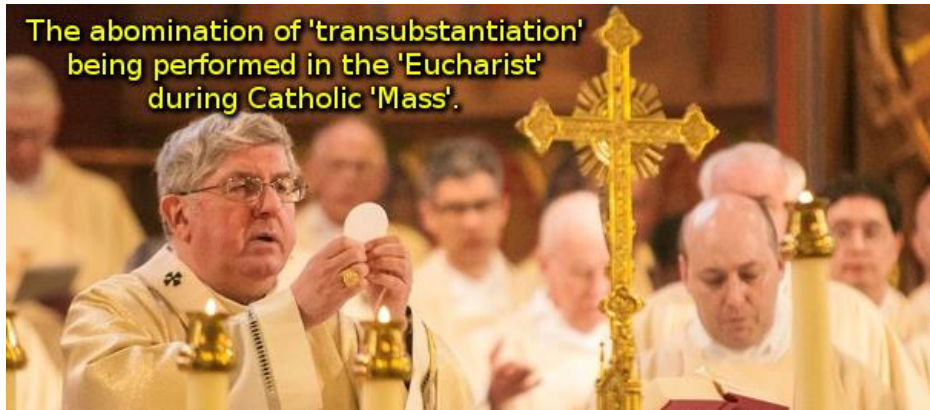
consecrate (v): to make or declare sacred or hallowed in service of a deity

(See 'eucharist', 'sacrament' & 'consecrate', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

The "sacraments" are words and actions that the Catholic Church believes all people must speak and perform in order to gain the grace of God, or in simple terms, it is a works-based false doctrine, meaning that you have to do the works performed and the words spoken in the Catholic Eucharist to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. This is why most of these terms (all of them except the word "consecrate") are not found in the Bible; they are man-made traditions, not Biblical instructions. Catholic priests claim to "*consecrate the elements of the Eucharist*," which, in simple terms, means that they take a wafer and wine, say a prayer over them, and believe they have been *LITERALLY* transformed into the *PHYSICAL* body and blood of Christ.

transubstantiation (n): the changing of the elements of the bread and wine, when they are consecrated in the Eucharist, into the body and blood of Christ

(See 'transubstantiation', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)



So in summary, the Eucharist is the Catholic Mass, where all the Catholics get together and watch a Catholic priest do some ritualistic prayers over round wafer pieces and some wine to supposedly "transform" them (otherwise known as "transubstantiation"). Then, one by one, all the Catholics come up, receive a wafer on their tongue, and then [they all drink alcoholic wine](#) from the same cup (that gets wiped off with each use, but still—kind of gross), and with *NO* metaphorical meaning, they believe that they ate the *LITERAL* body of Christ, and drank the *LITERAL* blood of Christ.

By consuming these things, they believe they receive the grace of God. How much grace did they get by performing these actions? No one knows for sure, and no one has any idea how much "grace" they need to receive to get out of purgatory. However, they believe that if they keep going to mass over and over and over again, eventually, they will rack up enough grace points to enter heaven; very similar to a "rewards card" you might get at a restaurant, but the only difference is that, to get the reward in the Catholic Church, you have to repeat the same action an unspecified amount of times for the rest of your life.



The Catholic Catechism, which is the official rulebook of the Catholic Church set forth by a council appointed and approved by Pope John Paul II in 1992, states:

*"At the Last Supper, on the night he was betrayed, our Savior instituted the Eucharistic sacrifice of his Body and Blood.*

*This he did in order to perpetuate the sacrifice of the cross throughout the ages until he should come again,"*

-*Catechism of the Catholic Church*, Crown Publishing Group, 2nd Edition, 2012, ISBN: 9780307953704; See also *Catechism of the Catholic Church*, Part 2, Section 2, Chapter 1, Article 3, Canon #1323, retrieved Mar 20, 2018,

[vatican.va/archive/ccc\_css/archive/catechism/p2s2c1a3.htm]

perpetual (adj): continuing forever

(See 'perpetual', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

If you read it carefully, you may have noticed that the Catholic Church claims that the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross was "perpetuated" specifically on the night He was betrayed, *NOT* on the day He was crucified. In other words, Catholicism teaches that Christ gave the works of transubstantiation and the Eucharist to be an everlasting covenant to gain God's grace, and this is a lie that has deceived billions of people.

*And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.  
-Luke 22:19*

This act of consuming bread and wine from the Passover supper (commonly known as the "Last Supper") before Christ went to the cross is often referred to as "communion," based on 1 Corinthians 10:

*The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?  
-1 Corinthians 10:16*

Though Catholics may tell you that they do "communion" just like everyone else, that is not true because the Eucharist of the Catholics in their Mass is far different than communion, and it is performed under completely different doctrine. Catholics believe that they can only receive God's grace if they perform the Eucharist, because they believe that they may only be reconciled to God through transubstantiation, but that is not what the Bible teaches us:

*And that he [Jesus] might reconcile both [Jew and Gentile] unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby:  
-Ephesians 2:16*

To reconcile is to gain one's favor or grace in union and friendship, which is not attained through the works of communion, but rather, it is gained by grace (a gift) through faith, as Ephesians 2 says a few verses earlier:

*For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:  
-Ephesians 2:8*

And it should be emphasized that men are reconciled unto God by the blood of Christ on the cross, not grape juice on the betrayal.

*And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.  
-Colossians 1:20*

Our transgressions were nailed to the cross, not to the Last Supper.

*Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nauling it to his cross;  
-Colossians 2:14*

The Catholic Church teaches doctrine that is contrary to Scripture on this subject. To make sure there is no confusion about what Catholicism teaches, let's read what the Council of Trent decreed:

*"He [Jesus Christ] offered up to God the Father His own body and blood under the species of bread and wine; and, under the symbols of those same things, He delivered (His own body and blood) to be received by His apostles,"*

-Council of Trent, Session XXII, Chapter I, "On the Institution of the Most Holy Sacrifice of the Mass," retrieved Mar 20, 2018, [thecounciloftrent.com/ch22.htm]

If what the Catholic Church just stated was true, then there was absolutely *NO* reason for Christ to go to the cross at all. If Christ gave His sacrifice of body and blood at the Passover feast with His disciples, then why did He need to offer His body and blood a second time at the cross? It does not make sense because the Bible tells us that Christ offered up Himself *ONCE*, but the Catholic Church contradicts the Bible by teaching Christ did this twice.

*Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.*

*-Hebrews 7:27*

Christ only offered Himself *ONCE*, and that was *NOT* at the Last Supper. The Holy Spirit (i.e. the author of the Holy Scriptures) very clearly stated that Christ sacrificed himself one time on the cross for all:

*By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.*

*-Hebrews 10:10-14*

Christ offered Himself *ONE TIME* for all sin, which means the Catholic Church denies Christ by claiming that forgiveness of sin can come through another sacrifice in the Mass, which is what Pope John Paul II believed and taught: "*The Eucharist is above all else a sacrifice. It is the sacrifice of the Redemption and also the sacrifice of the New Covenant,*"

-Pope John Paul II, quoted by Steven J. Schloder, *Architecture in Communion: Implementing the Second Vatican Council*, Ignatius Press, 1998, p. 52, ISBN: 9780898706314

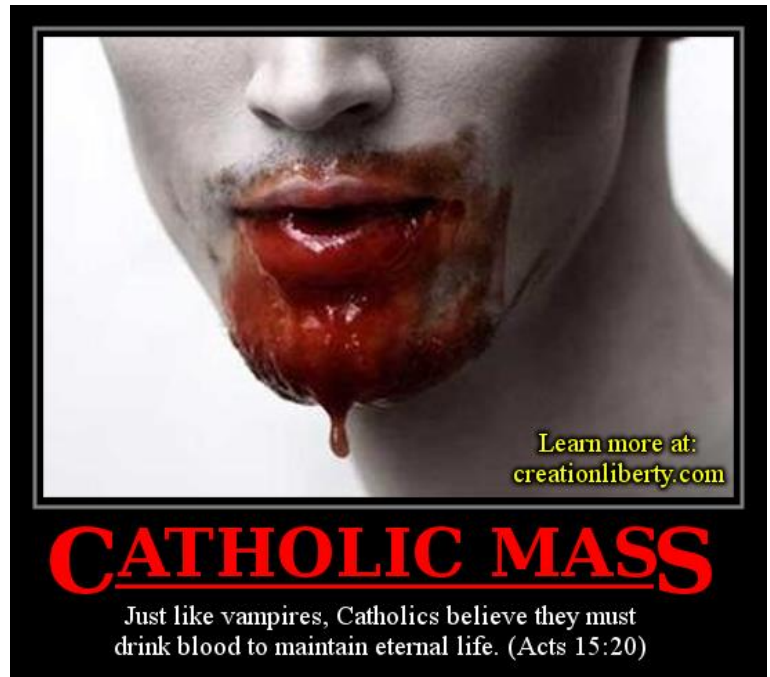
Again, Hebrews 10:11 stated very simply that other sacrifices, like those done in the Catholic Mass, "*can never take away sins,*" but the Catholic Church teaches the opposite. The Catholic Catechism declares:

*"At the Last Supper, on the night he was betrayed, our Savior instituted the Eucharistic sacrifice of his Body and Blood. This he did in order to perpetuate [continue forever] the sacrifice of the cross throughout the ages until he should come again, and so to entrust to his beloved Spouse, the Church, a memorial of his death and resurrection: a sacrament of love, a sign of unity, a bond of charity, a Paschal [Passover] banquet 'in which Christ is consumed, the mind is filled with grace, and a pledge of future glory is given to us.'"*

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, Part 2, Section 2, Chapter 1, Article 3, "The Sacraments of the Eucharist," Canon #1323, retrieved Mar 16, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc\_css/archive/catechism/p2s2c1a3.htm]

Earlier, we learned that 'perpetuate' means to "continue forever," so what the Catholic Church believes is that the sacrifice Christ made on the cross continues on *FOREVER IN THE CATHOLIC EUCHARIST*; meaning they are offering new sacrifices continually in their Mass. This is false doctrine. As we just read, the Bible teaches clearly that Christ's sacrifice on the cross was done once, and that is enough; no other works, ceremonies, or sacrifices done by Catholic priests can offer salvation or grace, and by denying that Christ's one-time sacrifice was enough, Catholics deny Christ's sacrifice, or in short, if a Catholic believes and practices what the Catholic Church teaches, he/she will end up in hell without Christ.

In summary, because they believe the wine they drink is the *LITERAL* blood of Christ, the Catholic Church teaches that you must drink Christ's blood over and over in order to maintain eternal life. If you think about it, that is no different than the demonic concept of a vampire.



Even if they were drinking literal blood, the early church in the book of Acts established that we, as born again Christians, were to avoid eating or drinking blood:

*But that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from things strangled, and from blood.*  
-Acts 15:20

*Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things. But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat.*  
-Genesis 9:3-4

*It shall be a perpetual statute for your generations throughout all your dwellings, that ye eat neither fat nor blood.*  
-Leviticus 3:17

In the Old Testament, the sacrifices made by the Jews for the atonement of sin had the blood drained out of them (Lev 4:7), the meat cooked, and the Levites did not consume the blood with the eating of the meat. This is one of the few ordinances that continues in the New Testament because we are to respect the blood of life (Lev 17:11), knowing that the law requires blood atonement for the remission of sins (Heb 9:22), which Jesus Christ paid in full. (Acts 20:28) The Catholic Church ignores these commandments of Scripture and continues to instruct their followers to drink blood, which is not really blood, but they claim it is blood, under the appearance of it not being blood.

Perhaps readers might be thinking that having to drink blood that is not really blood, but is claimed to be blood anyway, seems nonsensical. If you thought that, you are correct, it is nonsense.

Let's imagine for a moment that the Lord Jesus Christ performed the miracle of turning water into wine, but He made it appear to be water by sight, taste, and smell; would they have still called it a miracle without the evidence that a miracle had taken place? Would the people have called it a miracle if Peter and John had, through the power of Christ, lifted up the lame man to walk, but under the appearance that he could not walk? No one would ever believe that a miracle had been performed without evidence that a miracle had occurred, and that shows us the extreme absurdity of Catholicism in their willingness to believe in a miracle without evidence.



Where I come from, we call that a scam:

**scam** (n): a confidence game or other fraudulent scheme, especially for making a quick profit; swindle

(See 'scam', *Random House Dictionary*, 2020, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

I do not need more faith to believe the Catholic wine turns to blood, and that is because the Spirit of God within me gives me understanding so that I do not put my faith into a lie. Rather, it is Catholics who needs to put their faith into the truth of God, namely, that their wine is just wine, Catholic priests are teaching doctrines of devils, and that one cannot drink the cup of God and cup of devils at the same time.

*Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.*

*-1 Corinthians 10:21*

*Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;*

*-1 Timothy 4:1*

There is a fallacy among church buildings to say, "I take the Bible as literally true from cover to cover." This is error because the Lord God uses many metaphors in His Word to help us more easily understand His doctrine. This is why I prefer to say, "I take the Bible seriously from cover to cover," especially when it comes to Catholicism because they take *MANY* metaphorical verses out of their context and try to apply them literally, and that is why they teach so many false doctrines.

When the Lord Jesus Christ tells us that we born again Christians are His "sheep" ([John 20:27](#)), this is meant for us to consider a shepherd watching over his sheep in a similar manner; He does not mean we are literal sheep that have wool and must be literally herded around a meadow. When Christ says He is the door ([John 10:7](#)), are we to believe that He is literally made of wood and has hinges? It would be absurd to believe such things. Likewise, when Christ said the bread and wine was His body and blood, it is a metaphorical reference, not a literal one; it is His shed blood on the cross that is the literal sacrifice.

Notice that the Bible says that God has reconciled men unto God by the *CROSS*, not by the cup:

*Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace; And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby:*

*-Ephesians 2:15-16*

However, the Catholic Church has condemned to damnation and destruction anyone who denies that the wafer and wine they give people is the *LITERAL* body and blood of Christ:

*"If any one saith, that, in the sacred and holy sacrament of the Eucharist, the substance of the bread and wine remains conjointly [combined; i.e. as separate thing that is included together] with the body and blood of our Lord Jesus Christ, and denieth that wonderful and singular conversion of the whole substance of the bread into the Body, and of the whole substance of the wine into the Blood-the species Only of the bread and wine remaining-which conversion indeed the Catholic Church most aptly calls Transubstantiation; let him be anathema."*

-Council of Trent, "Concerning the Most Holy Sacrament of the Eucharist," First Decree, Canon II, retrieved Mar 22, 2018, [[thecounciloftrent.com/ch13.htm](http://thecounciloftrent.com/ch13.htm)]

Simply put, they stated that if you do not believe that the Catholic priest transforms the wafer and wine into the *LITERAL* body and blood of Christ (without any evidence that a miracle has taken place), you are damned to hell. As we mentioned in the last chapter, an anathema results in death and damnation in hell because once someone is anathemized, then they are no longer part of the Catholic Church, and if they cannot do the sacraments of the Eucharist in the Catholic Church, then they cannot gain God's grace, and therefore, they cannot enter heaven. Even though the wafer and wine has not changed into anything else, if you do not believe that they are transformed into the *LITERAL* body and blood of Christ, the Catholic Church rejects you, and condemns you to hell.

Thus, Catholics are not trained to put their faith into the Word of God, but rather, they are trained to put their faith into the traditions and doctrines of men set forth by the Catholic decree. Catholics claim with their mouths to believe on Jesus Christ, but in practice, they believe on Catholic priests, and their hearts are far from Christ because they follow after the commandments of men:

*This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*  
-Matthew 15:8

If you are rejected out of Catholicism for following the Word of God, and your Catholic family and so-called "friends" start spreading rumors about you, then you should rejoice:

*Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.*  
-Matthew 5:12

*Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake.*  
-Luke 6:22

The concept of transubstantiation is confusing enough, but worse still, because the Catholic Church knows the blood sacrifice of Jesus might offend some people, the Catholic Catechism says that the sacrifice of Christ, shedding his blood on the cross, is an "unbloody" sacrifice. I know that sounds absurd, but you did not misread what I said; they teach that the sacrifice of the Eucharist, which is to be wine transformed into blood under the appearance of wine, is not bloody: *"The sacrifice of Christ and the sacrifice of the Eucharist are one single sacrifice: The victim is one and the same: the same now offers through the ministry of priests, who then offered himself on the cross; only the manner of offering is different. And since in this divine sacrifice which is celebrated in the Mass, the same Christ who offered himself once in a bloody manner on the altar of the cross is contained and is offered in an unbloody manner... this sacrifice is truly propitiatory."*

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "The Sacrificial Memorial of Christ and of His Body, The Church," Part 2, Section 2, Chapter 1, Article 3, Canon #1367, retrieved Mar 16, 2018, [scborromeo.org/ccc/p2s2c1a3.htm#1367]; See also Peter M. J. Stravinskias, *Our Sunday Visitor's Catholic Encyclopedia*, Our Sunday Visitor Publishing, 1998, The Eucharist, p. 390, ISBN: 9780879736699

Though the Catholic Catechism says Christ "offered himself once," they contradict themselves to say that there was another offering that was unbloody, and further contradict themselves to claim on the one hand that the sacrifice was made at the Passover feast instead of the cross, while on the other hand claiming at the same time that the sacrifice was made on the cross. The reason they contradict themselves is because they follow the traditions of men instead of the doctrine of Christ.

The bottom line is that they deny Christ's blood sacrifice because one cannot be Biblically sound when he says a blood sacrifice is "unbloody," or without blood. The Bible teaches us that there is no offering for sin without the shedding of blood, which means that if it is an "unbloody sacrifice," it has no relevance to saving grace and remission (i.e. forgiveness) of sins.

*And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.*  
-Hebrews 9:22

So the Bible tells us that without the shedding of blood, God is not appeased, but the Catholic Church teaches us that God is appeased without the shedding of blood. Therefore, you can either you put your faith and trust into the Catholic Church, or you can put your faith and trust into God's Word.

*And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.*  
-Joshua 24:15



The Council of Trent goes on to point out that these "unbloody" sacrifices must be done not only for the living, but also for those in purgatory:

*"The fruits indeed of which oblation [sacrificial offering], of that bloody one [Christ on the cross] to wit [namely], are received most plentifully through this unbloody one [Catholic Mass]; so far is this (latter) from derogating [inferior] in any way from that (former oblation). Wherefore, not only for the sins, punishments, satisfactions, and other necessities of the faithful who are living, but also for those who are departed in Christ, and who are not as yet fully purified, is it rightly offered, agreeably to a tradition of the apostles."*

-Council of Trent, "On The Sacrifice Of The Mass," Doctrine, Chapter II, retrieved Mar 22, 2018, [thecounciloftrent.com/ch22.htm]

The Catholic Church loves making things as complex as possible so the average reader cannot understand them, so to make sure we understand what this just said, allow me to summarize it: They claimed that Christ's blood shed on the cross is received through the Catholic Mass, and that the Mass/Eucharist of the Catholic Church is equivalent to Christ shedding His blood on the cross, but neither of those claims are Biblical. Furthermore, they claim that those who have died and gone to their fabled "purgatory" benefit from performing the ritual of the Catholic Mass/Eucharist, and that it must be done over and over again to pay for the sins of the dead, which means, as I have already stated many times before, they do not believe on the cleansing blood of Jesus Christ.

To say that there is another sacrifice required, outside of the blood sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ, is to *DENY* Christ, and therefore **the Catholic Church denies Christ**. As we read earlier, the Bible tells us very clearly that Jesus offered Himself as a sacrifice *ONCE*, and that the priests who stand around in the temples (like those in Catholicism) are wasting everyone's time and money, and I will quote it again:

*Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.*  
-Hebrews 7:27

The Catholic Dictionary, written by a life-long Catholic priest who was trained in Rome, and approved by the Catholic Church, states:

*"As defined by the Church at the Council of Trent, in the Mass, 'The same Christ who offered himself once in a bloody manner on the altar of the Cross, is present and offered in an unbloody manner.' Consequently, the Mass is a truly propitiatory [continual] sacrifice, which means that by this oblation [sacrificial offering] 'the Lord is appeased, He grants grace and the gift of repentance, and He pardons wrongdoings and sins, even grave ones. For it is one and the same victim. He who now makes the offering through the ministry of priests and he who then offered himself on the Cross. The only difference is the manner of offering'"*

-John A. Hardon, *Catholic Dictionary: An Abridged and Updated Edition of Modern Catholic Dictionary*, Image, 2013, p. 290, ISBN: 9780307886347; Hardon was a Catholic Priest for most his life and held a Doctorate in Theology from Gregorian University in Rome.

In this statement, the Catholic Church goes so far as to say that the Mass/Eucharist is how a man comes to repentance (i.e. godly sorrow of wrongdoing), and that a man cannot receive the gift of repentance without the Catholic rituals. This is a works-based heresy of the Devil, which prevents men from finding the grace of God.

The Council of Trent tells us that it is the works of the Eucharist in the Catholic Mass by which God forgives sin. We have already read in Scripture that remission of sin, and the purification/sanctification of our souls, cannot come through any other means than the blood of Jesus Christ alone.

*Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot... Who by him do believe in God, that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory; that your faith and hope might be in God.*  
-1 Peter 1:18-21

Also note that the Council of Trent says that "*the only difference is the manner of offering*," meaning that they believe that the Catholic Mass/Eucharist is the exactly same, both in terms of function and value, as the sacrifice of Christ's shed blood on the cross. I once read a Catholic priest responding to a Catholic's question on this very issue, in which he attempted to persuade the Catholic parishioner that the Mass was only to bond people with Christ, but as we can see, that is not even close to what the Catholic Church teaches. (i.e. Catholic priests commonly teach ignorance and lies, working tirelessly to cover up the obvious contradictions of papal decree.)

It is abomination in the sight of God to keep making sacrifices when His Son already finished the work.

*When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.*

*-John 19:30*

The Catholic Church may as well be slapping God in the face to say, "*Your Son's sacrifice is not enough, so we will fix this problem ourselves*," as they attempt to do the impossible through their ridiculous rituals. What we have covered so far is just the beginning of the works the Catholic Church requires from the members of its laity, teaching them they must do works to gain more grace.

Once we have come to repentance and faith in Christ, the payment for our sins is *PAID IN FULL*, meaning that *NO AMOUNT OF WORKS* is needed to have full pardon for all sin.

*For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.*

*-Ephesians 2:8-9*

*This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.*

*Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.*

*-Hebrews 10:16-18*

We are either saved by grace or by works, but it cannot be both. If we rely on the Catholic Mass to give us grace, we will end up in hell:

*And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.*

*-Romans 11:6*

If we say we have grace, but that grace must be imparted to us by a religious ritual, then it is not grace. Having to perform that ritual for yourself many times over, and then having to have other perform it for you many times after you are dead, means that it is not grace.

*Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.*

*-Romans 4:4*

Grace *MUST* be a gift, otherwise, it is not grace. If anyone believes that a gift of grace is giving that has to be maintained over a long period of time by doing many works, then it is not grace. To say one receives grace by any works whatsoever is a complete contradiction, not only to the doctrines of Scripture, but also to the very definition of grace itself, and worst of all, such a false doctrine denies the one, final, ultimate sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ on the cross.

Because the Catholic Church teaches very strictly that the Mass is a sacrifice, then they have denied the doctrine of Christ when He said "*this do in REMEMBRANCE of me*," and not "this do to get your loved ones out of purgatory." The Mass is viewed by Catholics as a way to get bonus points to keep themselves out of purgatory, but the Catholic Church, in places of greater population, hold daily masses whereby people can come in and help get their dead friends and relatives out of purgatory.

(See United States Conference of Catholic Bishops, "Chapter VIII: Masses and Prayers for Various Needs and Occasions and Masses for the Dead," retrieved Mar 20, 2018, [<http://bit.ly/2IDHVn1>])

*And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.*

*-Luke 22:19*

*And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.*

*-1 Corinthians 11:24*

Despite the clear and simple teachings in the New Testament, the Catholic Church believes that their transubstantiated Eucharist is a sacrifice that needs to be made repeatedly, and you must come to their priests and give your money to them in order to receive the benefits of it. (This is done through something they call "indulgences," and we will cover more details on that in the next chapter.) They take away the reliance on the Lord Jesus Christ and put a false priesthood in His place, bringing men and women into bondage.

Please note that if you believe the following verses, the Catholic Church condemns you to hell:

*But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.*

*-Hebrews 10:12-14*

*Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.*

*-Hebrews 9:12*

*So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many;*

*-Hebrews 9:28*

*For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:*

*-1 Peter 3:18*

*Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.*

*-Jude 1:3*

In opposition to these Scriptures, the Council of Trent declares that if you believe what the Bible says, that the sacrifice of Christ was paid once for all on the cross, then you are damned:

*"If any one saith, that in the mass a true and proper sacrifice is not offered to God; or, that to be offered is nothing else but that Christ is given us to eat; let him be anathema."*

*-Council of Trent, "On The Sacrifice Of The Mass," Doctrine, Canon I, retrieved Mar 22, 2018, [thecounciloftrent.com/ch22.htm]*

We have already read the Scriptures teaching us that it is vain (i.e. useless) for priests to offer daily sacrifices over and over for the sins of the people, and that such practices can never take away sins, but again, the Catholic Church tells us that if you believe what the Bible says on that matter, then you are damned:

*"If any one saith, that by those words, Do this for the commemoration of me (Luke xxii. 19), Christ did not institute the apostles priests; or, did not ordain that they, and other priests should offer His own body and blood; let him be anathema."*

*-Council of Trent, "On The Sacrifice Of The Mass," Doctrine, Canon II, retrieved Mar 22, 2018, [thecounciloftrent.com/ch22.htm]*

In short, the Catholic Church is calling "evil" that which is good, and calling "good" that which is evil:

*Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!*  
-Isaiah 5:20

On the rare occasion that a Catholic would be reading this, you need to recognize that these are the decrees of the religion in which you believe. If it bothers you that the Bible teaches the exact opposite of what the Catholic Church teaches, then I encourage you to keep reading in the hopes that you may come to repentance and faith in the Christian God of the Bible, to be freed from the chains of Catholic bondage. Though the Catholic Church makes worthless threats of damnation and destruction, I want to remind readers that real damnation and destruction will fall on all those who die without the Lord Jesus Christ paying their debt of sin.

*He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.*  
-1 John 5:12

*For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God.*  
-1 Corinthians 1:18

## — #4 – Indulgences: Bonus Points for Heaven —

For readers unfamiliar with Catholic terms, let's look at a generalized definition of 'indulgences':

*indulgence*: a partial remission of the temporal punishment, esp. purgatorial atonement, that is still due for a sin or sins; a declaration by church authorities that those who **say certain prayers or do good deeds will have some of their punishment in purgatory remitted**

(See 'indulgence', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *New Dictionary of Cultural Literacy*, 3rd Edition, Houghton Mifflin Company, 2005)

Indulgences are what a Catholic believes he must say and/or do in order to reduce his time in purgatory, which means in order to believe in indulgences, one must first believe in purgatory, which is why we disproved the doctrine of purgatory in an earlier chapter before indulgences. It should be noted that some Catholics will tell you that they do not believe in indulgences, but if they make that claim, they are rebelling against the Catholic Church, and are condemned by Catholic decree.

Again, the Bible states very clearly that there are no magic words in a prayer that can take away sins because there is no work we can do for the remission (i.e. pardon) of sins:

*For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.*  
-Ephesians 2:8-10

Ephesians teaches us that we are ordained (appointed) to do good works, but not that good works pays the price of sin. As we already covered in the last chapter on the Catholic Mass/Eucharist, we either have grace, or we have works, but we cannot have both because grace is a free gift given by God, and so for Catholics to believe in works doctrine means they are rejecting the grace of God. (i.e. They will end up in hell with their hopes in false doctrine.)

During the 16th century, the Word of God was compiled by Christians (apart from the Catholic Church) and put in the common English language because, prior to that time, the Catholic Church did their best to keep the Bible away from the common people by only allowing it to be written in the Latin tongue, which few commoners understood, but once people got to read the Bible for themselves, a large number of people left the Catholic Church.

The common people's new found ability to read the Word of God for themselves, and their departure from the Catholic Church based on what they found in the Bible, is known today as "The Reformation." This is not to say that everyone who was a part of the Reformation was born again in Christ, but there was a large fraction of the population that was tired of the oppression of the Catholic Church in their suppression of knowledge, which is known as "The Dark Ages" in Europe.

Later in this book, we will go over the history of what is known as "The Inquisition" in Europe, which was the torture, rape, and murder of countless people over the doctrines of the Catholic Church, some of which I have covered in the last two chapters. One of those contentions was over the false doctrine of indulgences, and to understand why this was such a great offense against the Gospel of Christ worth dying for, we need to understand that indulgences has been one of the biggest money-making schemes to ever come out of Rome.

In chapter two, I mentioned that purgatory was the biggest money-making doctrines for the Catholic Church, being foundational for their profits, and the way they accomplish this is by selling indulgences. The greedy abuse of the poor and needy was so vile, it is best expressed by the famous saying of Johann Tetzel (commissioned by Pope Leo X in the early 16th century):

*"As soon as the coin in the coffer rings, the soul from purgatory springs."*

(See Roland Bainton, *Here I Stand: Life of Martin Luther*, New York: Penguin, 1995; also James Kittelson, *Luther The Reformer*, Minneapolis: Augsburg Fortress Publishing House, 1986)

Simply put, this phrase is saying, "Give us money, and your dead friends and relatives will go to heaven." This is a very clear example of what the Bible talks about concerning *"the love of money."*

*And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.*

*-1 Timothy 6:8-10*

The concept of indulgences rejects faith in Christ's shed blood on the cross for the sins of man, that He alone can save and purify them, and that he remits all their sin at the moment they are converted. By manipulating the ignorant public to believe in indulgences instead of Christ alone, the Catholic Church has devoured the houses of widows, meaning that after their husbands die and leave the widow his estate for her care in her old age, she ends up giving her money to a priest, that he would give special indulgences in the Mass/Eucharist to get her husband's soul out of purgatory.

*Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts; Which devour widows' houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.*

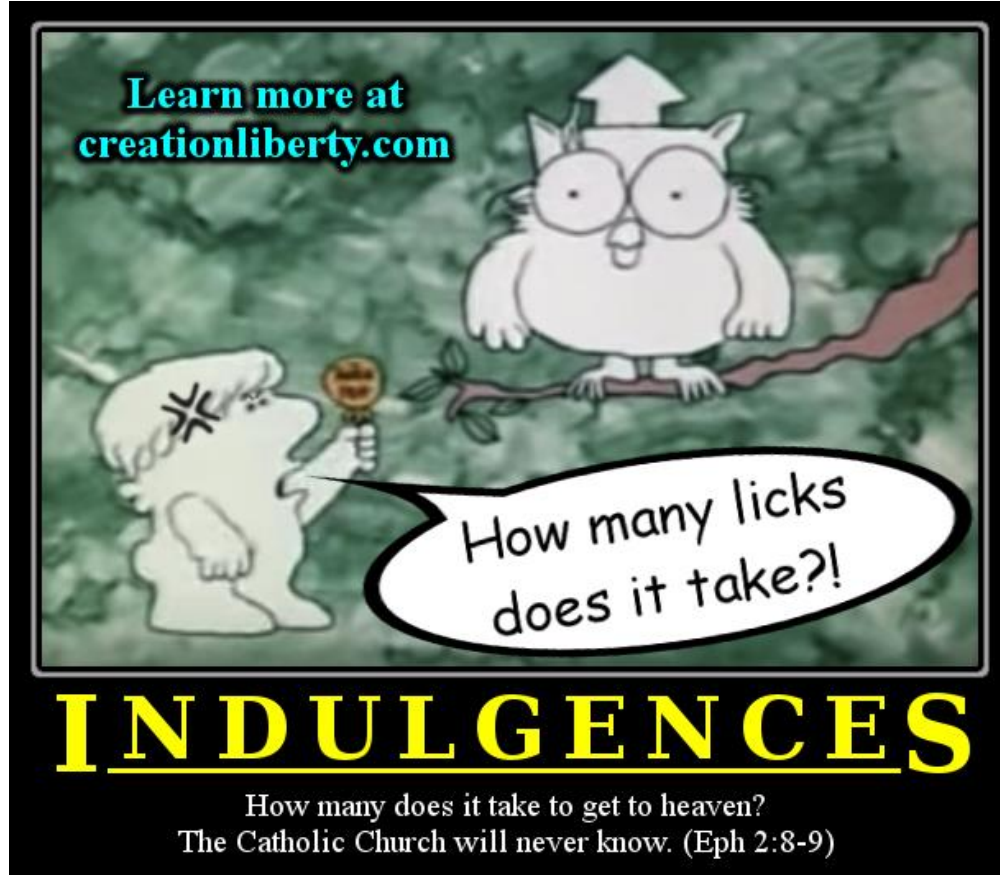
*-Luke 20:46-47*

The reason this issue is so rarely talked about today is because, in the past few decades, the Catholic Church has backed off advertising indulgences (for political reasons, not moral reasons); however, they still offer them. According to a 2009 *New York Times* article, the Catholic Church is starting to emphasize them again:

*"Why are we bringing it back?" asked Bishop Nicholas A. DiMarzio of Brooklyn, who has embraced the move. 'Because there is sin in the world.'"*

-Paul Vitello, "For Catholics, a Door to Absolution Is Reopened," *New York Times*, Feb 9, 2009, retrieved Mar 22, 2018, [nytimes.com/2009/02/10/nyregion/10indulgence.html]

The reason the Catholic Church is able to make so much money from indulgences is because, as we learned in chapter two, no one knows how much "grace" someone needs to enter heaven. (i.e. They foolishly treat the grace of God as if it is quantifiable by a number, weight, or length.) Even the Pope does not know how long he will need to remain in purgatory, and so Catholics are trained to do indulgences endlessly throughout their lives, not only for themselves, but also for the dead.



In simple terms, indulgences is a practice of "selling salvation" to those who believe that they can work their way into heaven because, for many centuries, the Catholic Church charged a fee to do indulgences. Essentially, the Catholic Church created a fake problem through false doctrine, and then came up with a "solution" by creating a ritual through which they could charge money. Though some Catholics will argue that the Catholic Church forbade the charging of money for indulgences in 1567, we need to keep in mind that the decree was nothing more than a political reaction to counter the outrage from the public during the Reformation, and it only served to retract the *REQUIREMENT* to charge money, which in no way prevented people from paying for them, or even priests to encourage people to pay for them, even promising them they would get special benefits from the indulgences if they paid for them.

Antonio Gavin, a former Roman Catholic priest in Saragossa, Spain, gives more details about the prices put on the indulgence of sins/crimes:

*"According to a book, called the Tax of the sacred Roman Chancery, in which are contained the exact sums to be levied for the pardon of each particular sin, we find some of the fees to be thus: 'Robbing a church, 2 dollars 25 cents. Simony, 2 dollars 25 cents. Perjury, forgery, and lying, 2 dollars. Robbery, 3 dollars. Burning a house, 2 dollars 75 cents. Eating meat in Lent, 2 dollars 75 cents. Killing a layman, 1 dollar 75 cents. Striking a Priest, 2 dollars 75 cents. Procuring abortion, 1 dollar 50 cents. Dead man excommunicated, 3 dollars. Priest to keep a concubine, 2 dollars 25 cents. Ravishing or deflowering a virgin, 2 dollars. Murder of father, mother, sister, brother or wife, 2 dollars 50 cents. Nun for frequent fornication, in or out of the nunnery, 5 dollars. Marrying on a day forbidden, 10 dollars. All incest, rapes, adultery and fornication committed by a Priest, with his relations, nuns, married women virgins and his concubines, with the joint pardon of all his whores, at the same time, 10 dollars. Absolution of all crimes together 12 dollars.'*"

-Antonio Gavin, *The Great Red Dragon: Or The Master-Key to Popery*, Samuel Jones, 1854, p. 263-264, [Harvard University]

We need to keep in mind, the American dollar did not exist at this time, but rather, this is an estimated exchange rate of gold or silver coins in Europe at that time, to the American dollar in the 19th century. The following table is Gavin's explanation so readers can more clearly understand what he is saying:

SIN/CRIME	PRICE
Robbing a church	\$2.25
Simony (i.e. trying to turn a profit from sacred things; named after Simon the Sorcerer who attempted to purchase the power of the Holy Spirit with money, Acts 8:18-22)	\$2.25
Perjury (lying under oath), forgery (creating false documents), and lying	\$2.00
Robbery/Theft in general	\$3.00
Burning a house	\$2.75
Eating meat during Lent	\$2.75
Killing a layman (a person who was not member of the Catholic clergy)	\$1.75
Striking (slapping/punching) a Catholic priest	\$2.75
Procuring (getting an) abortion	\$1.50
Dead man excommunicated (I am still unsure what this meant at the time.)	\$3.00
Priest to keep a concubine	\$2.25
Ravishing (rape) or deflowering a virgin	\$2.00
Murder of father, mother, sister, brother or wife	\$2.50
Nun for frequent fornication, in or out of the nunnery	\$5.00
Marrying on a day forbidden	\$10.00
All incest, rapes, adultery and fornication committed by a Priest, with his relations, nuns, married women, virgins, and his concubines, with the joint pardon of all his whores, at the same time	\$10.00
Absolution of all crimes together 12 dollars	\$12.00

I felt like my head was going to explode when I read that "simony" was on this list, and if you do not understand why, it is because 'simony' is another name for the sin of extortion, specifically when someone tries to take advantage of people from buying or selling pardons. The practice of indulgences in the Catholic Church *IS* taking advantage of people through the buying or selling of pardons, which means trying to use paid indulgences (which is a form of simony) to absolve someone of simony is like trying to use a blow torch to heal a burn wound.

If you are wondering how people could be that blind not to see a contradiction that is staring them right in the face, then you may not fully understand great blindness that comes over those who follow false religious ideologies. We Christians need to remember that, without the Holy Spirit to open our eyes, we would still be blind to these things too:

*But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.*

*-1 Corinthians 2:14*

Because they are more set to follow and worship priests rather than Christ, God then gives them over to their wicked minds, to do inconvenient (i.e. nonsensical) things:

*And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient;*  
-Romans 1:28

Personally, I found it fascinating to compare the different sins on the list, looking at how the Catholic Church rates them by their level of depravity, meaning that, by simple logic, we would presume that the higher the cost, the more dire the sin. Of course, we know that, in the eyes of God, all sin is worthy of everlasting death, that when we commit one sin, we are guilty of all ([Jms 2:10](#)), and so on a spiritual level, there is no difference; however, that being said, in this world, we hold certain sins greater than others in terms of their punishment, which means the higher prices should go towards the most grievous sins. However, that is not what we see the Catholic Church doing. How does theft have a higher price than murder? (i.e. Robbery was \$3.00, while murder was \$1.75.) You can even see their low standards concerning abortion, since marrying on a forbidden day costs six times more than killing a baby.

(Read "[Abortion: Paganism, Satanism, Sacrifices & Witchcraft](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Furthermore, many of these absolutions (i.e. indulgences to make one blameless for sin) do not make any sense and create ridiculous loop holes; for example, if a man robbed a Catholic Church, what money is he paying them with? If the man has not been caught, then does he not pay them with the money he stole? If we suppose that the price to be absolved of robbing a Catholic Church was two gold coins, then all the man would have to do is make sure that he steals at least three gold coins, and he would turn a profit whether he got absolved or not.

Earlier, we read Johann Tetzel famous phrase, "*as soon as a coin in the coffer rings, a soul from purgatory springs,*" and there was a great pressure that was put on Catholics in that day to pay for these indulgences, in the sense of threatening the family of the deceased loved ones that all they had to do was pay some money, and their loved ones would get entrance to heaven. Gavin goes on to explain how this extortion was preached:

*"The souls confined in purgatory, for whose redemption indulgences are purchased, as soon as the money tinkles in the chest, instantly escape from that place of torment, and ascend into heaven... the cross erected by the preachers of indulgences was equally efficacious with the cross of Christ itself. 'Lo,' said they, 'the heavens are open: if you enter not now, when will you enter? For twelve pence you may redeem the soul of your father out of purgatory; are you so ungrateful that you will not rescue the soul of your parent from torment? If you had but one coat, you ought to strip yourself instantly, and sell it, in order to purchase such benefit,"*

-Antonio Gavin, *The Great Red Dragon: Or The Master-Key to Popery*, Samuel Jones, 1854, p. 264, [Harvard University]

In summary, the priests would take advantage of the grief of the fatherless, in which a young man's father had died unexpectedly, and the priest would tell him what a cruel son he is for not willing to part with his money to get his father out of torment. The priests would also take advantage of the widows in their grief, telling them what horrible women they were for not giving some money to get her departed husband out of torment. And yet, while they rob the fatherless and widows blind, they would not strip their own coats and sell them to purchase such a thing on behalf of someone else because they would not touch such a burden with one of their fingers, leaving the orphans and widows to their grief, while expecting them to come to the priests who sit in a religious palace and collect their money.

*Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.*  
-James 1:27

*And he said, Woe unto you also, ye lawyers! [i.e. religious men who were well-versed in God's Word] for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.*  
-Luke 11:46



*Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.*  
*-1 Corinthians 6:9-10*

As a side note, many so-called "Christian" church buildings around the world extort their congregations in a similar way the Catholic Church extorts their congregations. Through the false teaching on storehouse tithing, which is completely unbiblical in the New Testament, modern day pastors threaten people with curses from God, claiming that they rob Him if they do not hand over at least (if not more than) ten percent of their income to that pastor every week. (Read "[Tithe is Not a Christian Requirement](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The Catholic Church was not only extorting the poor and needy, but when they held power and influence over the kingdoms of Europe, they also decreed that those who had paid the indulgence fee to be absolved of criminal activity were called "anointed malefactors," and **could NOT be prosecuted by any civil authorities**. Up until the 19th century, when the Catholic Church lost much of its political power in Europe, anointed malefactors were a commonplace problem for local governments. In case readers may not fully comprehend this absurd idea, it means that rapists, thieves, and murderers were getting away with their crimes because they had a priest in their pocket to make them immune from prosecution, meaning that even if the criminals were brought into a courtroom, they would have to be released as innocent men because they had been pardoned by a Catholic priest.

(For examples of anointed malefactors, see *Notes and Queries*, Oxford University Press, 1866, p. 359; See also Henry Worsley, *The Dawn of the English Reformation*, published Elliot Stock, 1890, p. 8)

For example, in the 18th century, German nobles openly voiced complaints about this problem; that they could not jail/execute criminals who were operating unchecked in their lands. The commoners would come to the Lords over the lands at the time, and there was nothing they could do because the Catholic priests had more power than the local magistrates. Worse still is that some people would go through the process of becoming a cleric of the Catholic Church because the governments in that day could not prosecute them for their crimes (i.e. Catholic priests could only be tried in private Catholic courts, away from the public eye); meaning that a priest who thought to do evil could (with some restrictions) continue to do evil, so long as they bowed to the Pope and maintained the title of a priest:

*"As long as the clerical character [Catholic priesthood] remained, the person of an ecclesiastic [member of Catholic clergy] was, in some degree, sacred [pure according to Catholic tenets]; and, unless he were degraded [demotion of position] from his office, the unhallowed [impure; not consecrated by the Catholic Church] hand of the civil judge durst not touch him. But as the power of degradation [demotion] was lodged in the spiritual courts [Catholic Church], the difficulty and expense of obtaining such a sentence, too often secured absolute impunity [exemption from punishment] to offenders. Many assumed the clerical character for no other reason than that it might screen them from the punishment which their actions deserved. The German nobles complained loudly that their ANOINTED malefactors, as they called them, seldom suffered capitally even for the most enormous crimes; and their independence on the civil magistrate is often mentioned in the remonstrances [protests] of the diets [legislative assemblies in government], as a privilege equally pernicious [harmful/destructive] to society, and to the morals of the clergy."*

-William Robertson, *The Historical Works of William Robertson*, Doig & Stirling, Vol. 5, 1813, p. 262-263, [Complutense University of Madrid]

Anointed malefactors were a plague of their own across Europe, but they were originally given the title by the German people:

*"No man, in short, dared touch the sacred hem of the priest's garment. Unless degraded from his office, he was even above the reach of the civil judge. And hence the reason, why priests were very appositely [appropriately] called, by the Germans, 'anointed malefactors,' and why they came to get into their hands, in that empire, more than one half of the national property."*

-Richard J. Sullivan, *A View of Nature: In Letters to a Traveller Among the Alps*, T. Becket, Vol. 6, 1794, p. 325, [University of Michigan]

In later chapters, we will cover more on the Catholic Church's acquisition of wealth and property, but for now, it should be noted that the anointed malefactors was one of the ways the Catholic Church and its priests were getting away with crimes against various countries and states. They would absolve themselves for murder and theft, essentially by paying themselves, and they would never have to reconcile with the victims.

When I said they were "paying themselves," this is not something to be taken lightly because in [my teaching on the modern false doctrines of storehouse tithing](#), I pointed out the hypocrisy of pastors who "set the example" to pay tithe in the church buildings by being the first to stand up and put money in their offering plate, but rarely does anyone stop and consider that his paycheck comes from that money, which really means he is paying himself, while providing an outward appearance of charity and obedience. Likewise, the Catholic priests were doing the same thing when it came to crimes within their priesthood, which had a much higher rate of payment than they charged the general public:

*"If anyone arraigned [called in on criminal charges] in a secular court for robbery or murder could prove his ability to read or write, he was allowed to claim 'benefit of clergy,' and thus to have his cause transferred from the secular to the spiritual court. The greater leniency of ecclesiastical sentences may be argued to have 'done much to uphold a higher standard of humanity'; but a wide door had been thus thrown open to gross abuses. The Roman Chancery had established a graduated scale of fines, according to which by a money payment 'anointed malefactors' could compound for flagrant transgressions. The vow of chastity might be violated for the modest sum of one hundred livres ['lee-vra' - French currency]. Assassination by a bishop or abbot cost the guilty ecclesiastic three hundred livres. Absolution from murder was assessed to a deacon at twenty crowns. [unit of currency that is used in many European countries]"*

-Henry Worsley, *The Dawn of the English Reformation: Its Friends and Foes*, Elliot Stock, 1890, p. 8, [University of Wisconsin - Madison]

The prices varied based on the country, but the larger sums for crimes against the Catholic clergy from within were *NOT* because they found crimes committed by the clergy to be of higher offense, but rather, they were trying to prevent infighting and divisions among the clergy, or in other words, the higher prices were political, not moral. However, the bottom line is that when they would pay these fines for their crimes, they were paying with money they were given by the general public, or in other words, they were simply paying themselves to absolve their own crimes, and I would add they only paid the fines *IF* they got caught, which means the fines were more for show than anything else.

Just because there was a public declaration from the Catholic Church to not charge people for indulgences, the practice continued through the anointed malefactors because the criminals who were loyal to the Catholic Church (i.e. including many priests) still needed a way to avoid criminal prosecution. Due to political pressure, the price for indulgences was removed for the general public, but as I stated earlier, it was still preached unto them that they could receive more or better indulgences through donations, so the Catholic Church could still continue to profit on the poor and needy.

The problem is that, since the Catholic Church has slowly been rebuilding after they lost a lot of their political and religious influence in the 19th century, the practice of indulgences dropped off. However, as we read earlier in the *New York Times* article, the Catholic Church is working to bring back indulgences because it is part of the official doctrine of the Catholic Church, as the 2nd Vatican Council stated:

*"The faithful who use with devotion an object of piety (crucifix, cross, rosary, scapular, or medal) after it has been duly blessed by any priest, can gain a partial indulgence. But, if this object of piety is blessed by the Pope or any bishop, the faithful who use it with devotion can also gain a plenary [absolute] indulgence on the feast of the Apostle Peter and Paul, provided they make a confession of faith using any approved formula."*

-Austin Flannery, *Vatican Council II: The Conciliar and Post Conciliar Documents*, 1988, p. 77-78, ISBN: 9780918344151

The "object of piety" (which means a religious object) is actually idolatry, and I would challenge any Catholic to show me where "relics" and blessings over those relics were used by the New Testament church, or when we were commanded to do such things by Jesus Christ or His apostles, or anywhere they set an example do such things. If you read the Scriptures carefully, you will find nothing but rebuke of such idolatrous practices, and we will cover more on that in chapter six. The doctrine of indulgences is supposed to be standard operating procedure for Catholics, and for those who practice it, they are deceived into thinking their vain repetitious prayers, alongside their money, will get them into heaven.

*But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.*

*-Matthew 6:7*

*(Read "The Biblical Understanding of Prayer" here at [creationliberty.com](http://creationliberty.com) for more details.)*

For a Catholic to receive an indulgence, they must memorize and repeat a certain prayer a number of times. As we just read from the Word of God, that is a heathen (i.e. pagan) practice. Along with this, Catholics are required to participate in the Mass, to do all the antibiblical things listed out in previous chapters, otherwise, their indulgence will not be complete.

To address the differences in indulgences, what the Vatican Council said is that if you come in to a Catholic temple to get an indulgence from your average, everyday priest, you might get a small span of time knocked off your purgatory punishment equal to what we will call (for the purpose this example 1 bonus point (representing whatever amount of time 1 point would be worth in purgatory)). If you go to a high priest, who oversees many other priests, you might get the equivalent of 5 bonus points time knocked off your purgatory sentence. If you go to a high priest on a particular celebration that is meaningful to Catholics, you might get around 15 bonus points, but if you can manage to somehow get the Pope's attention, and have him give you an indulgence on one of the high Catholic holidays, you might get 100 bonus points, which is why many Catholics are desperate to gain the Pope's attention when he comes into their town.

Of course, there are many Catholic websites out there that do their best to excuse away these things, or worse still, cover them up, because they do not want the public to know what I am teaching in this book. At best, their religious nonsense is foolish, and at worst, they are leading people to the wide gates of hell with this doctrine.

For example, *Catholic Online* deceives their readers and causes a lot more confusion by telling them that people like myself are teaching error on indulgences:

*"If you uncover a holy card or prayer book, you'll notice pious acts or recitation [vain repetition] of prayers might carry an indication of time, such as '300 days' or 'two years.' Most fundamentalists, and even many Catholics, think such phrases refer to how much 'time off for good behavior' you'd get in purgatory. If you perform a pious act labeled as '300 days' partial indulgence, then you'd spend 300 fewer days in purgatory. It's easy to see how misinformed Catholics might scurry around for years, toting [carrying] up indulgences, keeping a little register in which they add up the days. 'Let's see, last year's tally comes to one thousand three hundred twelve years, give or take a week or so, and my lifetime tally is now past the twenty thousand mark. I can cancel out a lot of sinning with this!' Or so some people might think. Well, there are no days or years in purgatory -- or in heaven or hell, for that matter -- and the indication of days or years attached to partial indulgences never meant you'd get that much time off in purgatory."*

-*Catholic Online*, "Introduction to Indulgences," retrieved Mar 23, 2018, [catholic.org/prayers/indulgc.php]

If there is no time in purgatory, then purgatory would have to be eternal, or in other words, it would be a fluffier version of hell, just without the fire. Furthermore, how does it make sense to get a "plenary" indulgence that remits part of *TEMPORAL* (i.e. temporary, having to do with a small increment of time for) punishment in purgatory?

temporal (adj): of or relating to time

(See 'temporal', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

*Catholic Online* accuses me of teaching error on the topic of indulgences, so let's take *Catholic Online's* suggestion and look at a standard Catholic prayer card, which I found by simply going online to a Catholic store where they sell Catholic-approved materials:



At the bottom, the prayer card says:

*"Indulgences, 5 years, plenary, under usual conditions, for month's recitation."*

-*Shop Catholic Inspirational Gifts*, "Holy Family Laminated Prayer Card," KE24-360, retrieved Mar 23, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2ubNx4J]

They say it is "plenary" (i.e. full) instead of "partial" because, as we read earlier, it would have been "blessed" by a Catholic bishop prior to shipment, and that is supposed to knock five years off of a Catholic's time in purgatory, whether for the person praying, or for a dead person who is supposedly already in purgatory. However, *Catholic Online* says this is error because time does not exist in purgatory, and as I just pointed out, if it does not involve time, then it is eternal, and if it is eternal, then it cannot be "temporal," (i.e. temporary) as the Catholic Catechism says:

*"An indulgence is partial or plenary according as it removes either part or all of the temporal punishment due to sin. Indulgences may be applied to the living or the dead."*

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "X. Indulgences: What is an Indulgence?" Part 2, Section 2, Chapter 2, Article 4, retrieved Mar 23, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ENG0015/\_P4G.HTM]

So we read the Catholic Church's official decree, which states that indulgences remove time from purgatory, but then we read the Catholic Church's official teaching, which states that indulgences do not remove time from purgatory. Are we supposed to believe the Catholic Church or the Catholic Church? One of them is wrong, and it does not take a theology degree to figure out that the party in error is the Catholic Church.

There are many drastic contradictions that exist within Catholic-approved organizations, websites, and temples. One way or another, those five years listed out on the prayer card are *MEANINGLESS* (i.e. vanity) because purgatory does not exist, and Catholics waste their time and money on false doctrine that will not save them from hell.

Sadly, it is very difficult to preach this message to a Catholic who participates in indulgences because not only do they refuse to believe they have wasted so much time and money on nonsense, being deceived by a man (i.e. the priest) who they look up to (instead of the Lord Jesus Christ) for religious guidance, they also do not want to think that their loved ones would be in hell. If a Catholic has departed from this world with his hopes and faith in purgatory, I can guarantee that he will never see the Kingdom of God.

*Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.*  
-John 14:6

In effort to get Catholics to return to indulgences, the Catholic Church is using social media to make it easier for people to get them; now offering digital indulgences (or as some have jokingly referred to them as "e-indulgences") through Twitter, as reported by *USA Today* in 2013:

*"Following Pope Francis' Twitter feed may be good for your soul — both in this life and the next. The spiritual leader of the Roman Catholic Church plans to grant plenary indulgences by Twitter during the World Youth Day, which will be held July 23-28 in Brazil. The indulgences, which Catholics believe can reduce the time a soul spends in purgatory, will be available to Francis' nearly 7.5 million Twitter followers in all languages — if they tune in to World Youth Day broadcasts or take other spiritual actions. To get an indulgence, Catholics must have already had their sins absolved by a priest... Even people who can't travel to a major church event or pilgrimage can still experience that forgiveness... if they take some kind of spiritual action."*

-Bob Smietana, "How You Can Save Your Soul: In 140 Characters or Less," *USA Today*, July 17, 2013, retrieved June 18, 2015, [usatoday.com/story/news/nation/2013/07/17/twitter-plenary-indulgences-pope/2524213]; See also *National Catholic Reporter*, July 22, 2013, [nrconline.org/news/art-media/tweet-your-way-out-purgatory-theres-work-involved]

The recipients of the indulgence must still participate in all the other rites of the Catholic celebration, but if they do all those things, then they can get a Pope-approved indulgence on Twitter to get them a bunch of bonus points for heaven. This is a childishly nonsensical false doctrine of works, which is teaching that in order to get God's forgiveness, you must do a list of deeds at certain places, at certain times, and nearly every false religion around the world utilizes the same corrupt philosophy so they can get their followers to do a lot of work and earn them a lot of money.

The title of the article we just read from is called, "*How You Can Save Your Soul: In 140 Characters or Less*," which is what the Catholic Church teaches, but it is a lie from the pit of hell. Again, there are no magic words to say in a prayer to gain's God's grace, nor does it need to be done an endless number of times throughout your life. Salvation is based on repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing) and faith in Christ alone, but indulgences (which cannot offer salvation) are all based on the idea that you have work off your sin to be justified in the sight of God.

The Bible teaches that we cannot be justified by the works of the law:

*Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.*

*-Galatians 2:16*

Earlier, I mentioned that there are some Catholics who claim they do not believe in indulgences, as a means to justify themselves, but I would remind them that they are rebelling against their own religion by saying such things, or in other words, they claim to be Catholics while arguing against the Pope and the Roman council of bishops.

The Council of Trent states:

*"Whereas the power of conferring Indulgences was granted by Christ to the Church; and she has, even in the most ancient times, used the said power, delivered unto her of God; the sacred holy Synod [clergy] teaches, and enjoins [instructs/urges], that the use of Indulgences, for the Christian people most salutary [beneficial], and approved of by the authority of sacred Councils, is to be retained in the Church; and It condemns with anathema those who either assert, that they are useless; or who deny that there is in the Church the power of granting them."*

*-Austin Flannery, Vatican Council II: The Conciliar and Post Conciliar Documents, 1988, p. 71, ISBN: 9780918344151*

I have no problem stating clearly that, by the gift of understanding God has given me in His Word, I know the Catholic Church is false and dangerous cult, and they have *NO* spiritual authority to grant a so-called "indulgence." If anyone reading this is a practicing Catholic and you do not follow the doctrine of indulgences, then according to the authorities presiding over the Catholic Church, you are an apostate against the Catholic Church, and they have condemned you to hell.

Rather than running to a priest, bowing before him and trying to touch the hem of his garment, it would be infinitely better and simpler to repent (i.e. have godly sorrow of your wrongdoing) and cry out to the Lord Jesus Christ, putting your total trust in Him to save you. Depart from the devils of Rome, and look to the Jesus Christ.

Though I may repeat many of these verses, I do so for emphasis, and to build up the faith of former Catholics, to remind them that the Bible teaches very clearly you do not need indulgences for forgiveness of sins:

*If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.*

*-1 John 1:9*

*So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.*

*-Romans 10:17*

Thus far, we have read that the Catholic Church has damned all those who do not believe in the Catholic Mass, transubstantiation, purgatory, and now indulgences. We are only chipping at the iceberg of anathemas the Catholic Church has decreed, and though we will get to more of those later, in the next chapter, we are going to address the works doctrine of the Catholic Church in much more detail to see how far from God's Word Rome has always strayed.

## #5 – Working For Grace: A Deadly Oxymoron

Before we continue on to cover the huge amount of idolatry that exists in the Catholic Church, it is important that Catholics understand that "working for grace" is an oxymoron. In chapter two, we learned what an 'oxymoron' is, but let's refresh our memories and look at the definition again:

*oxymoron* (n): a figure of speech by which a locution [i.e. a word or phrase] produces an incongruous [i.e. out of place], seemingly self-contradictory effect, as in 'cruel kindness' or 'to make haste slowly'

(See 'oxymoron', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

The term 'grace' should also be defined:

*grace* (n): favor, good will, kindness; the free unmerited love and favor of God

(See 'grace', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Sept 4, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

I once had an atheist tell me that they did not understand the concept of grace, and that it made no sense, but I knew that he was just acting out because he hated what I was teaching. He knew full-well what grace is, and so does everyone else in this world. Grace is something you did not deserve, and did not earn, but you received anyone as a gift; for example, babies did nothing to earn a diaper change, and they did no work for their meals, but they were given grace by their parents.

A baby does not have to do anything to earn the grace by the parents, just as we do not have to do anything to earn the grace of God. The Bible tells us the grace of God is a free gift:

*Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.*

*-Romans 5:18*

As we learned in previous chapters, the Scriptures clearly teach that you either have grace by a gift, or you have works from which you get a wage that is owed, but you cannot have both. The Bible teaches it is impossible to have the grace of God while claiming that you earned it through your works:

*And if by grace, then is it no more of works; otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace; otherwise work is no more work.*

*-Romans 11:6*

This means God's grace cannot be earned by any works a man can do. There is no ritual or series of memorized phrases that one can speak which will make them deserving of God's grace. God's grace cannot be purchased, and it cannot be bought or sold. Salvation is a gift that is given freely by the will of God, and cannot come through any other means:

*Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.*

*-Romans 5:18*

Notice that the Scripture said "all men," not that all men are automatically saved, but that all who come to repentance (i.e. godly sorrow) and faith in Christ will receive the free gift of justification unto life; that is, no man can gain eternal life by any other means. It should also be noted that, even though the gift is free, God does not just give it to anyone who claims to believe on Jesus because their hearts must be humbled to repentance, like a child. (Mark 10:15)

(Read "[Is Repentance Part of Salvation?](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Jesus very directly warned that many would claim to believe on Him, meaning that they would claim to be Christians, but He will reject them unto everlasting punishment in hell:

*Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many [i.e. not few] will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.*  
-Matthew 7:21-23

(Read [Why Millions of Believers on Jesus Are Going to Hell](#) here at [creationliberty.com](#) for more details.)

If salvation were by works, then when those many people, who claimed to be Christians, come to Jesus on the final day, then Jesus would have said, "Well done my good and faithful servant," and brought them into heaven, but that is not what He said He will do. Those children of God, who have been born again, must come with a humble heart of godly sorrow as a little child; those are who He knows.

There are many false teachers out there who claim that repentance is a work because they believe word 'repent' means "to turn from sin," or "to change one's mind," but that is not at all how Scripture defines repentance. The Bible says that repentance, like faith and salvation, is a gift from God:

*In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure [i.e. perhaps] will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth;*  
-2 Timothy 2:25

Based on my experiences speaking with Catholics, I would say most Catholics have been taught repentance to mean sorrow of one's wrongdoing against God, but the problem is that they go to a priest in a confession booth instead of going to God, or in other words, they do not put their trust in Christ alone, but in a priest to save them. This is what the Bible calls "*the sorrow of the world*," meaning that they bring their repentance to a person or organization, rather than to God directly, and the Bible tells us that will lead to death.

*For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.*  
-2 Corinthians 7:10

The reason that works death is because for a man to go to another man (i.e. a religious figure, like a priest) for the remission (i.e. forgiveness) of sins is to put his trust and faith in men, and not God.

*Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.*  
-Jeremiah 17:5

Those who "make flesh their arm" are those who, when they corrupt in their spirits, reach out to men for a helping hand, thinking that the rituals and traditions of men can save their souls. They do not turn to Jesus Christ, to rely on the holy power of God, but rather, they turn to a man who claims to be of God, and relies on his word instead of the Word of God.

Therefore, the wages of his sin will not be paid. The wages of sin cannot be paid by anyone else other than Jesus Christ alone, and if a man turns to any other source for his salvation, Jesus will not save that man.

*For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.*  
-Romans 6:23

Essentially, Catholics do not trust that the gift of God is enough to save them. They do not trust in the promises of God, and turn to religious rituals as their hope for salvation.

*For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.*  
-Ephesians 2:8-9

**wages** (n): hire; reward; that which is paid or stipulated for services

(See 'wages', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Oct 3, 2020, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

When the Bible says "*the wages of sin is death*," it is saying that payment for sin is death. From the moment we are born into this world, we have inherited sin, and we commit sins from when we are very young, even if we are never taught to do them, and therefore, it does not matter if you do millions of good works, there is no chance for your good works to make up for the wages of sin, just as there is no amount of good works that a murderer can do to make up for killing someone else.

This is why the very concept of purgatory, the Mass/Eucharist, and indulgences is completely opposed to the Gospel of Jesus Christ and the philosophy of Scripture. If purgatory, masses, or indulgences were the answer, the Bible would tell us that the wages of sin is punishment, rituals, or special prayers, but that is not what the Bible says.

The Bible teaches us that good works grant us reward in heaven, not that it grants us saving grace from God. (1Co 3:8) Good works or religious rituals are *NOT* the foundation of saving grace through Christ.

## Good works and religious rituals do *NOT* justify men in the eyes of God.

Grace is a gift of mercy, and the works we Christians do are a result of Christ's saving grace and mercy upon us, as a tree bearing fruit in its time. (Mark 4:8) But again, works are *NOT* a foundation of saving grace.

*Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?*  
-Matthew 7:16

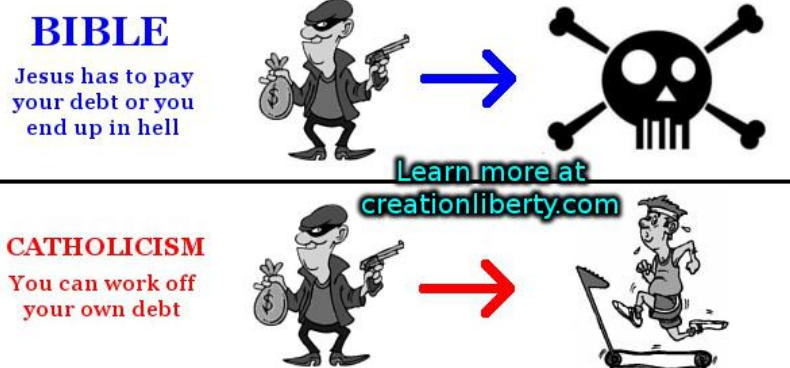
The Catholic Church is very deceptive and confusing on this matter because on one hand, they state that salvation (i.e. justification) comes by the grace of God, but on the other hand, they say that eternal life has to be "*merited*" (i.e. earned/deserved) through good works. The Council of Trent stated:

*"[W]e must believe that nothing further is wanting to the justified, to prevent their being accounted to have, by those very works which have been done in God, fully satisfied the divine law according to the state of this life, and to have truly merited [i.e. earned] eternal life, to be obtained also in its (due) time [i.e. they believe you have to go to purgatory to get it], if so be, however, that they depart in grace."*

-Council of Trent, "On the Fruit of Justification, that is, On the Merit of Good Works, and On the Nature of that Merit," Session VI, Chapter XVI,

Think about what they said for just a moment because, they started out saying that a Catholic must do works to earn eternal life, but then say that Catholics must depart (i.e. die and leave this world) in a state of grace. However, we learned in chapter three that in order to get the grace of God, you must do works and rituals, so if we combine it all together, they teach that you have to do works to gain eternal life, but only if you are in a state of God's grace, and to die in a state of God's grace, you have to be a member of the Catholic Church and do works and rituals to earn God's grace.

Simply put, here is the Bible's doctrine versus the Catholic Church's doctrine:





However, because the Catholic Church has a lot of fancy buildings, ceremonial clothes and music, and present their false message with good words and fair speeches, they deceive the hearts of many simple-minded people, all for the sake of filling their own bellies.

*For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.*

*-Romans 16:18*

By "serving their own belly," the Bible means they teach false doctrines because they know it will make them money so they can feed themselves, and people willingly give them money and respect because they appear to be holy on the outside.

*Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.*

*-John 7:24*

Because so many people are respecting persons, which is sin, very few Catholics will ever read a book like this to understand the truth. Instead, they opt to go to a priest and trust in a fancy title, degree, or religious office.

(Read "[Respecting Persons Is Sin](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors.*

*-James 2:9*

The Bible makes it very clear that justification/salvation cannot be earned by doing good deeds or performing religious traditions:

*Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.*

*-Romans 3:20*

*For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:*

*-Romans 3:23-24*

It is true that only the righteous can enter the Kingdom of God, but no man is righteous, and therefore, righteousness has to be given to us. Christ bears our sin and gives us *HIS* righteousness, and therefore, we do not "merit" justification and eternal life by our own means because the Bible directly states that those who have done no good works, but trusts in Christ, their faith is counted for righteousness.

*Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.*

*-Romans 3:28*

*But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.*

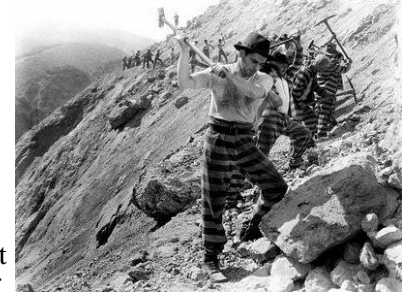
*-Romans 4:5*

The Catholic Church wants you to believe that you can work off your own sin debt and earn Christ's salvation, which is what almost every religious cult around the world teaches. After all, the cult leader needs all the laity (i.e. the lowly worshipers in the cult) to do all their work for them, otherwise, priests would have to work for a living like everyone else.

Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

-Romans 4:4

To look at this another way, since the wages of sin is death, how can someone pay for death without death? In other words, how can someone pay for eternal punishment without eternal punishment? The only way to not suffer death is to have someone else die in our place, which is what Jesus Christ did for us, so we would not have to pay that eternal penalty, and I can assure readers that no priest can pay that price on your behalf.



Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

-Galatians 2:16

The only way to escape hell and the wrath of God is by trusting in the Lord Jesus Christ as the one-time payment for sin, which means ALL debt, paid in full. If you cannot trust Him at His Word, then He will not save you. If Catholics want to work off their own sin debt, the only way to do it is by suffering never-ending punishment in hell, and that is exactly where most Catholics will end up, with their hopes in the false doctrine of a purgatory that does not exist.

For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

-Romans 10:4

But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law.

-Romans 9:31-32

And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:

-Phillipians 3:9

However, ignoring the Holy Scriptures, the Vatican Council states:

*"In fact the apostles themselves urged their disciples to pray that sinner might be saved. This very ancient practice of the Church has happily lasted, particularly in the practice of penitents [i.e. Catholics confessing to a Catholic priest] begging the whole community's prayers, and in helping the dead with intercessions [i.e. prayers and indulgences for the dead to get them out of purgatory], especially through the offering of the Eucharistic Sacrifice. From the most ancient times in the Church good works were also offered to God for the salvation of sinners, particularly works which human weakness finds hard. Because the sufferings of the martyrs for the faith and for God's law were thought to be very valuable, penitents used to turn to the martyrs to be helped by their merits to obtain a more speedy reconciliation from the bishops. Indeed, the prayers and good works of holy people were regarded as of such great value that it could be asserted that the penitent was washed, cleansed and redeemed with the help of the entire Christian people."*

-Austin Flannery, *Vatican Council II: The Conciliar and Postconciliar Documents*, Liturgical Press, 2014, Chpt. 3, ISBN: 9780814649299

Thus, not only is the Catholic Church teaching that you must work your way into heaven, but worse still, they are teaching that you can rely on the works of other men to get you into heaven. After all my years studying the Word of God, I can assure you that no man will enter into heaven on works of any other man except the Lord Jesus Christ (who is God).

Indeed, the Bible does teach us to teach and pray for the sake of lost sinners to be saved, but there is NO place in Scripture that teaches us to pray for the dead, as we covered in chapter two on purgatory. That so-called "very ancient" practice is only very ancient to pagans, not to the church of Christ. Vatican II then confirms once again what we have seen throughout this book so far, that the way "sinner might be saved" is through confession to priests (instead of Christ) and the abomination of the Eucharist/Mass via the cup of devils.

Thus, we can clearly see that the Catholic Church requires works to be saved, on your own merits instead of on the Lord Jesus Christ, because you have to do a lot of praying, for those alive and dead, calling upon priests (not God) in the Catholic Church, and doing the rituals of the Eucharist and Mass in order to gain salvation. This is heresy; we Christians do not call the Catholic Church antichrist because it's just some shocking word to use, but rather, we say it is antichrist because it is against all that Christ taught us. The Pope and his bishops state clearly that they believe it is through the merits of other Catholics within the Church of Rome, not the Lord Jesus Christ, that one obtains the merits of justification/salvation, which means in a nutshell, the Catholic Church has attempted to put a patent or trademark on salvation.

Though we just read in Romans 3 that a man cannot become justified by good works, and that justification comes through faith in Christ alone, the Catholic Church condemns to hell all those who would believe what the Bible says:

*"If any one saith, that the good works of one that is justified are in such manner the gifts of God, as that they are not also the good merits of him that is justified; or, that the said justified, by the good works which he performs through the grace of God and the merit of Jesus Christ, whose living member he is, does not truly merit increase of grace, eternal life, and the attainment of that eternal life, if so be, however, that he depart in grace, and also an increase of glory; let him be anathema."*

-Council of Trent, "On Justification," Session VI, Canon XXXII, retrieved Mar 28, 2018, [thecounciloftrent.com/ch6.htm]; See also James Waterworth, *Canons and Decrees of the Sacred and Ecumenical Council of Trent*, 2003 Reprint, Kessinger Publishing, Canon #32, p. 48-49, ISBN: 9780766138414

Once again, the Catholic Church clearly states that you must perform good works to merit grace and eternal life, which is an oxymoron. They condemn to hell anyone who refuses to believe in the Catholic Church's blatant, heretical contradiction, namely that you must receive the grace of Jesus, but it is not enough to have Christ's free gift; you must do works to earn the gift of grace.

Let's look at another statement from the Council of Trent:

*"If any one saith, that justifying [saving] faith is nothing else but confidence [faith] in the divine mercy which remits [pardons] sins for Christ's sake; or, that this confidence [faith] alone is that whereby we are justified [saved]; let him be anathema."*

-Council of Trent, "On Justification," Session VI, Canon XII, retrieved Mar 28, 2018, [thecounciloftrent.com/ch6.htm]; See also James Waterworth, *Canons and Decrees of the Sacred and Ecumenical Council of Trent*, 2003 Reprint, Kessinger Publishing, Canon #12, p. 46, ISBN: 9780766138414

**If you believe that Jesus paid it all,  
the Catholic Church condemns you to hell.**

The Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ, which saves the souls of lost sinners, is condemned to hell in the Catholic Church. Once more time, let's read from Galatians 2, to emphasize the contradiction:

*Knowing that a man is not justified [saved] by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified [saved] by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified [saved].*

-Galatians 2:16

The good works we do as born again Christians are a result of the saving grace of Christ, but here is another example where the Catholic Church teaches the opposite:

*"If any one saith, that the justice [salvation] received is not preserved [maintained] and also increased before God through good works; but that the said works are merely the fruits and signs of Justification obtained [i.e. your works are a result of saving grace], but not a cause of the increase thereof; let him be anathema."*

--Council of Trent, "On Justification," Session VI, Canon XXIV, retrieved Mar 28, 2018, [thecounciloftrent.com/ch6.htm]; See also James Waterworth, *Canons and Decrees of the Sacred and Ecumenical Council of Trent*, 2003 Reprint, Kessinger Publishing, Canon #24, p. 47, ISBN: 9780766138414

The Catholic Church just stated, in no uncertain terms, that their parishioners must believe that their good works "cause" the increase of justification for saving grace, or in other words, good works replaces the blood of Jesus Christ. If you are a Catholic, you need to acknowledge that what your religion teaches and believes is directly opposed to what Jesus Christ taught, and in a later chapter, we will read more direct quotes from the Catholic Church in which they say they do not follow Scripture, but rather, they follow tradition, and that is one of the key reasons for their error; **they follow the traditions and commandments of men instead of the Christian God of the Bible.**

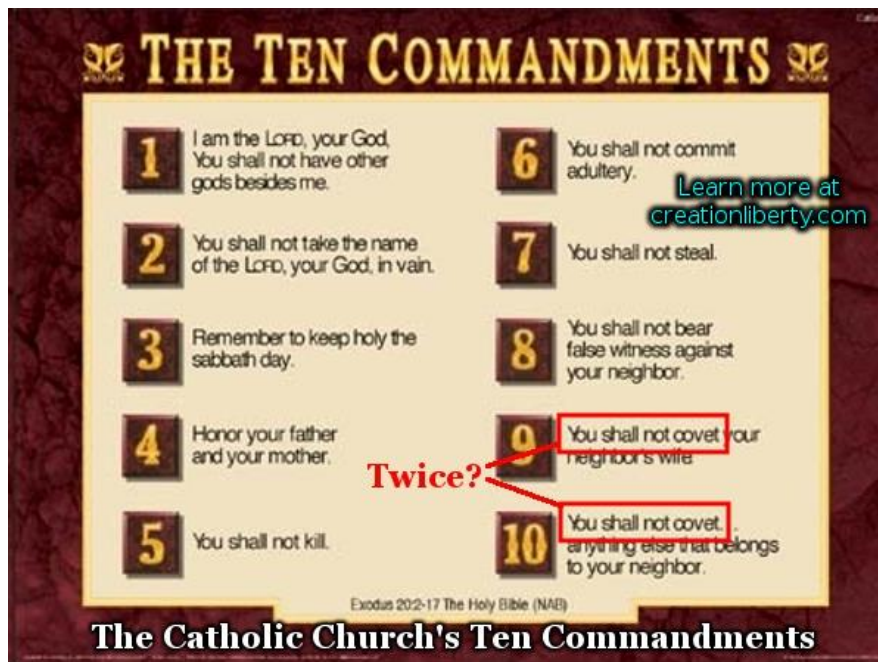
*Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy [way of thinking] and vain deceit [worthless lies], after the tradition of men, after the rudiments [first teachings] of the world, and not after Christ.*  
-Colossians 2:8

*Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*  
-Mark 7:7

## — #6 – Idolatry: The Goddess Called ‘Mary’ —

In the first chapter, we went over the history of Catholicism's origin, which was founded in paganism, and thus, it should be no surprise to find many links to pagan practice and doctrine in their religion. One of the most well-known examples of paganism in the Catholic Church is their worship of a goddess they call "Mary," and though Catholics will claim this was the Mary of the Bible, which was the virgin woman who gave birth to Christ, that is far from the truth, as we will learn in this chapter.

If you go to the Catholic Church and ask them for a copy of the Ten Commandments to take home with you, they may give you a card that looks something like this:



(The fine print at the bottom says it is taken from the NAB, which stands for the New American Bible, and is also known as the NASB, New American Standard Bible. This is a corrupt new-age version Catholics commonly use.)

The card says that they took these ten commandments from Exodus 20:2-17. **QUESTION: Can you find the following verse on this Catholic card?**

*Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth:*  
-Exodus 20:4

Of course, you could not find it anywhere, could you? The reason you will not find this verse in the Catholic version of the Ten Commandments is because it was removed from the Catholic Ten Commandments, and they claim it was never part of the original Ten Commandments.

The Jews have always had the commandment about "no graven images" (from [Exodus 20:4](#)) within the second commandment of the Ten Commandments, and that is what they still teach their children to this day. That leads us to an obvious question: **Since the Jews knew this was the proper interpretation of Scripture, then why did the Catholic Church remove it entirely?**

(See Menachem Posner, "The Ten Commandments," *Chabad.org*, retrieved Mar 28, 2018, [chabad.org/library/article\_cdo/aid/2896/jewish/The-Ten-Commandments.htm]; See also Ronald H. Isaacs, "The Ten Commandments," *My Jewish Learning*, retrieved Mar 28, 2018, [myjewishlearning.com/article/the-ten-commandments])

In order to remove the second commandment and still have a total of ten (which they needed because the commandments are listed out as 'ten' in Scripture, [Exd 34:28](#)), the Catholic Church had to do some sleight-of-hand deception. They took out the 2nd commandment, shifted the 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th, 7th, 8th, 9th, and 10th commandments down one slot (for a total of nine commandments), then split the final 10th commandment into two parts to make up the 9th and 10th commandments.

*And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.*  
-Revelation 22:19

The Catholic Church's excuse for their changing of the Ten Commandments is that they claim Exodus 20:4 is part of the first commandment, and so they removed the part about graven images (i.e. idolatry) because they thought it would just be assumed, but that is *NOT* the real reason they changed it; it is just a reason that they give to appease Catholic questions, knowing that most Catholics do not study the Bible and do not do research to verify what priests tell them. Granted, the Jews have it all as one commandment as well, but they still have it as part of the second commandment. The real reason the Catholic Church removed the graven images is because the Catholic Church is *OVERFLOWING* with graven images, idols, and pagan gods, so it would not be profitable for them to hand out cards with commandments that condemn their practices and beliefs.



The Catholic Church is filled with graven images like these.

*Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.**-1 John 5:21*

Do not misunderstand; I am not saying that the Vatican ignored the commandment about graven images, or that they are unaware of it, but rather, they simply swept it under the rug. It is very interesting that, on the Vatican's official website, they have a table with columns showing Exodus 20 (from their corrupt new-age version), comparing it with Deuteronomy 5 (another instance of the Ten Commandments), and then comparing those with the "*Traditional Catechetical Formula*," which is the Catholic version of the Ten Commandments, but there is a huge gap they leave between what the Jews call the first and second commandments.

Exodus 20 2-17  
Learn more at creationliberty.com

I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.

You shall have no other gods before me. You shall not make for yourself a graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth; you shall not bow down to them or serve them, for I the LORD your God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children to the third and the fourth generation of those who hate me, but showing steadfast love to thousands of those who love me and keep my commandments.

You shall not take the name of the LORD your God in vain, for the LORD will not hold him guiltless.

Deuteronomy 5:6-21

I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.

You shall have no other gods before me.

A Traditional Catechetical Formula

1. I am the LORD your God: you shall not have strange Gods before me.

2. You shall not take the name of the LORD your God in vain.

**The Catholic Church changed "no other" to "strange," then left this huge gap; why are the first and second paragraphs separated if they're all one?**

(See Catechism of the Catholic Church, "Section Two: The Ten Commandments," Vatican Archives, retrieved Sept 5, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc\_css/archive/catechism/command.htm])

The information listed on the left-hand column is the beginning of the Ten Commandments in Exodus 20, and we need to remember that the Catholic Church claims verses 2-6 are all the same commandment. The gap they left in the middle of it is very strange and is not found in Scripture, and they use that as a justification for how they structured their version of the Ten Commandments, as you can from the other examples on the right. (i.e. They have no logical or theological reason for excluding the commandment about idolatry.)

Notice that the Vatican uses the phrase "*strange gods*" in place of the phrase "*no other gods*," because this is far more significant than most people realize. To put a finer point on this, let's suppose you were in a restroom with stalls, and there was a sign on the door that said "*use no other toilet except this one*," you would clearly heed the warning that this specific toilet was the only toilet that was to be used; however, if you read a sign that said, "*use no strange toilets*," then it would be up to your discretion to determine what toilet you would consider to be "strange."

strange (adj): foreign, belonging to another country; not domestic

(See 'strange', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Sept 5, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

Pagans use a lot of graven images for their religious worship, from statues to symbols to trinkets. It is impossible to be a legitimate practicing pagan without committing idolatry, and therefore, pagans tend to hate any commandments from God that condemn their sin.

Remember, we have already established that the Catholic Church was born out of the Roman Empire, with a Roman Emperor as their first pope, and that Rome had amassed many pagan religions from around the world. Thus, what might be "strange" to the Jews, was not what was "strange" to Rome because various pagan religions were commonly known to Rome, they made a home in Rome, and the people of Rome were familiar with them. This clause would mean that the Catholic Church is free to worship whatever gods they please, so long as they are familiar with them, or as long as they attribute those gods to Christ, which would be a form of blasphemy.

It should be pointed out to those of us born again in Christ that even the cross symbols you see on church buildings, jewelry, and clothing are idolatry. The Bible tells us that we ought not to think that any such symbols represent the Godhead (i.e. Father, Son, and Holy Spirit), or anything like unto them because to do so is to adopt the ways of the heathen (i.e. pagans and witches).

(Read "[Christian Symbols Are Not Christian](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

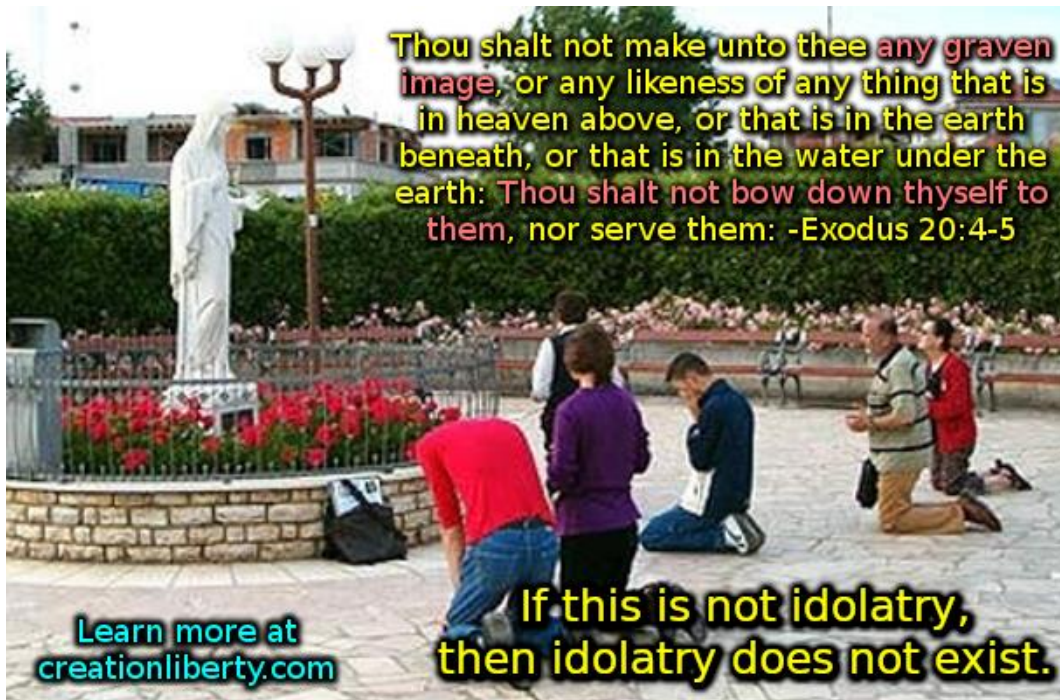
*Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device.*

*-Acts 17:29*

It is very easy to see the idolatry of graven images in the Catholic Church (and even in most "protestant" church buildings today, due to their use of so-called "Christian" symbols), and so the Catholic Church had to come up with some response to this, since Catholic churchgoers were left without a response to born again Christians showing them the truth. How do they answer the accusation of idolatry? *Catholic Answers* tells them the following:

*"'Catholics worship statues!' People still make this ridiculous claim. Because Catholics have statues in their churches, goes the accusation, they are violating God's commandment: 'You shall not make for yourself a graven image... you shall not bow down to them or serve them' (Ex. 20:4-5);"*

*-Catholic Answers, "Do Catholics Worship Statues?" retrieved Mar 29, 2018, [catholic.com/tract/do-catholics-worship-statues]*



In short, *Catholic Answers* is satisfied to just call worshiping statues of Mary "ridiculous," which does not answer anything; however, before we go further, this anonymous author has already made a false claim because the argument I am making is **NOT** that "*Catholics are idolaters because they have statues.*" I also believe that is a ridiculous claim. I do **NOT** argue that everyone who visits an art museum is an idolater. (They could be, but not in that context.) The accusation I am making is, "*Catholics are idolaters because they have graven images which they claim represent the Godhead, and they use them for religious worship.*" *Catholic Answers Magazine* knows full-well that they cannot respond to the argument I am making because the evidence is too overwhelming, so instead, they create what is known as a "Strawman Argument."

A Strawman Argument is a logical fallacy; just as a man made of straw, like a scarecrow for example, is less sturdy than an actual man, so too is a strawman argument less sturdy than the actual argument. It is much easier to fight a made up strawman attacker than to fight a real man, and likewise, it is much easier to answer a strawman argument than the actual argument.

Formally, a strawman argument looks like this:

- Person 1 makes claim X.
- Person 2 restates claim X in a distorted way and attacks it.
- Therefore, claim X is false.

That is likely too confusing for most readers, so let's simplify it with an example:

- **BOB:** "Cindy, your food is too spicy."
- **CINDY:** "Hey everyone, Bob hates spicy food, so he doesn't like what I cooked."

Bob never claimed that he did not like spicy food, but rather, Cindy distorted his statement by claiming something else he did not say. Likewise, *Catholic Answers* distorts the argument of a Christian by claiming they are complaining that Catholics "having statues," rather than addressing the argument that worshipping images dedicated to the Godhead are a violation of the commandments of God.

If you go on to read the *Catholic Answers* article, their argument is that God had commanded the children of Israel to make statues in certain circumstances, so therefore, they claim is that their graven images are acceptable. For example, in Numbers 21:

*Therefore the people came to Moses, and said, We have sinned, for we have spoken against the LORD, and against thee; pray unto the LORD, that he take away the serpents from us. And Moses prayed for the people. And the LORD said unto Moses, Make thee a fiery serpent, and set it upon a pole: and it shall come to pass, that every one that is bitten, when he looketh upon it, shall live. And Moses made a serpent of brass, and put it upon a pole, and it came to pass, that if a serpent had bitten any man, when he beheld the serpent of brass, he lived.*

-Numbers 21:7-9

To make sure we understand the argument I am making, let's read what I said one more time: "***Catholics are idolaters because they have graven images, which they claim represent the Godhead, and they use them for religious worship.***" Based on this statement, I have three points to make.

**1.** God directly commanded the Jews to make a statue of a serpent, and thus, there is no violation of the commandments of God when the people are following His direct commandments. Remember that the Jews were also directly commanded to exterminate certain pagan tribes, but that does not give Christians a justification to go around killing anyone they think is bad. These should be absurdly obvious to anyone who follows Christ (and to anyone who simply reads the Scriptures), but it is difficult to get Catholics to understand such things when they are too busy worshipping idols.

In addition, not only were such statues not used for religious worship among the Jews, but again, God told them to do these specific things at this specific time for a specific reason. Christians were *NEVER* instructed by God to create statues for religious purposes, and I would challenge Catholics to find me anywhere in the New Testament where that was practiced.

**2.** If Moses and the Hebrew population bowed down to this serpent statue in prayer, as you see the Catholics doing in previous images, then God would have severely punished them, as he did at Mount Sinai when three thousand of them were found to be worshipping a calf made of gold:

*And the children of Levi did according to the word of Moses: and there fell of the people that day about three thousand men.*

-Exodus 32:28

In verse 27, the Lord God commanded this to happen, and that means He hates the use of idols. If what the Catholic Church is doing with their graven images, paintings, and other so-called "holy" symbols is not idolatry, then *NOTHING* can be considered idolatry.



idolatry (n): the worship of idols, images, or any thing made by hands, or which is not God; idolatry is of two kinds; the worship of images, statues, pictures, etc. made by hands; and the worship of the heavenly bodies, the sun, moon and stars, or of demons, angels, men and animals; excessive attachment or veneration for any thing, or that which borders on adoration

(See 'idolatry', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Oct 10, 2020, [webstersdictionary1828.com])



3. *Catholic Answers* does not claim their argument to be Biblical, or in other words, they do not claim that their beliefs come from Scripture. If you read their article, they claim their argument is "*common sense*:"

"Common sense tells us that, since God has revealed himself in various images, most especially in the incarnate Jesus Christ, it's not wrong for us to use images of these forms to deepen our knowledge and love of God."

-*Catholic Answers*, "Do Catholics Worship Statues?" retrieved Mar 29, 2018, [catholic.com/tract/do-catholics-worship-statues]

In case you missed it, *Catholic Answers* just stated that they believe that Jesus Christ coming to this world in the flesh is an "image" in the same way that they carve graven images for their worship. In other words, they believe that because Jesus came from heaven into this world, therefore, the Catholic Church is entitled to practice idolatry.

Notice they did *NOT* say, "The Bible teaches us this practice" — they said "Common sense teaches us this practice." This means they are not basing their argument on the Word of God; the Catholic Church is basing their argument on the foundation of their own thoughts and feelings, how they want to see things through their own eyes, claiming to be wise in their own sight.

*Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the LORD, and depart from evil.*  
-Proverbs 3:7

*There is a generation that are pure in their own eyes, and yet is not washed from their filthiness.*  
-Proverbs 30:12

*Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!*  
-Isaiah 5:21

It is also important to note that *Catholic Answers* said that their idols "deepen their knowledge" of God. Those statues and paintings are blind, deaf, and ignorant; they do not pass knowledge to anyone, and the Bible very clearly tells us that those who look to them in worship are like unto them, meaning they too are blind, deaf, and ignorant:

*Their idols are silver and gold, the work of men's hands. They have mouths, but they speak not: eyes have they, but they see not: They have ears, but they hear not: noses have they, but they smell not: They have hands, but they handle not: feet have they, but they walk not: neither speak they through their throat. They that make them are like unto them; so is every one that trusteth in them.*

-Psalm 115:4-8

*Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.*

-1 Corinthians 12:2

Of course, we have physical proof that the Catholic Church is guilty of idolatry, but even if we never saw one statue, symbol, or trinket, they would still be guilty of idolatry in their hearts. The Catholic Church thinks that by justifying their use of statues, they have created a loophole that allows them an excuse for idolatry, but that is a grave, hypocritical error. Just as Jesus pointed out that looking and lusting after a woman means a man committed adultery in his heart, even though he did not physically do the deed, likewise, many churchgoers in this world are guilty of idolatry, even though they have never owned, used, or carved a graven image.

(Read "[The Biblical Understanding of Idolatry](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*Son of man, these men have set up their idols in their heart, and put the stumblingblock of their iniquity before their face: should I be enquired of at all by them?*

-Ezekiel 14:3

*Catholic Answers* concludes by saying:

*"The Church absolutely recognizes and condemns the sin of idolatry. What anti-Catholics [i.e. born again Christians] fail to recognize is the distinction between thinking a piece of stone or plaster is a god and desiring to visually remember Christ and the saints in heaven by making statues in their honor."*

-*Catholic Answers*, "Do Catholics Worship Statues?" retrieved Mar 29, 2018, [catholic.com/tract/do-catholics-worship-statues]

I laughed out loud when I first read that paragraph because, not only is it a bold-faced lie, it is also the exact same excuse pagans use to justify their idolatry. The Catholic Church does not recognize idolatry as any grievous sin because if they did, they would have condemn themselves in anathema; however, conveniently, this is one of the very few doctrines for which (as far as I am aware) the Catholic Church does *NOT* have anathemized condemnations, and that should be no surprise to readers at this point.

The Catholic Catechism states:

*"The Christian [i.e. Catholic] veneration [reverence, or high degree of respect] of images is not contrary to the first commandment which proscribes idols. Indeed, 'the honor rendered to an image passes to its prototype [the original from which the image was copied; thus, they are saying that prayers to the image of Mary pass through to Mary],' and 'whoever venerates [greatly respects] an image venerates the person portrayed in it.' The honor paid to sacred images is a 'respectful veneration,' not the adoration due to God alone: Religious worship is not directed to images in themselves, considered as mere things, but under their distinctive aspect as images leading us on to God incarnate."*

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "IV. You Shall Not Make For Yourself A Graven Image," Part 3, Section 2, Chapter 1, Article 1, Canon #2132, retrieved Mar 29, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc\_css/archive/catechism/p3s2c1a1.htm]

The funny thing about this statement is that they said the worship of images, which they indeed do in the Catholic Church, is "*respectful veneration*," and not "adoration." The reason that is humorous is because they mean the same thing:

vereneration (n): the highest degree of respect and reverence; respect mingled with some degree of awe; a feeling or sentiment excited by the dignity and superiority of a person, or by the sacredness of his character

adoration (n): the act of paying honors to a divine being; homage paid to one in high esteem; profound reverence

(See 'veneration' & 'adoration', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Oct 10, 2020, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

In short, the Catechism is saying that they are not worshipping idols, they are just worship idols; they just use fancier words to deceive the simple. The first sentence of the quote is simply a declaration to say that God was wrong in His Word when He wrote the Ten Commandments, and such argument is absurd and foolish to say the least.

I found it fascinating that when you look at what pagans say when they are accused of idolatry, they make exactly the same excuses as the Catholic Church makes in their Catechism, and I will demonstrate that. Lia Rees, a practicing pagan who was formerly a Catholic (i.e. she converted away from Catholicism to paganism, which is an easy philosophical transition), says the same thing when asked if pagans worship statues:

*"As one of the few modern followers of the ancient Roman Religion, and educated in the fields of archaeology and theology, I can safely say you're on the right track with this. [i.e. She's referring to the question asked.] No pagan religion ever believed the statues, fetishes, or images were the gods themselves. Much like Catholic ikonography [study of symbols and their meanings], they were reminders and representations of the gods. Also like the ikons [representation of a sacred person], they were made to glorify and praise the god in whose image they were made."*

-Lia Rees, "Did The Pagans Actually Worship Statues?" *Quora*, Dec 7, 2015, retrieved Mar 29, 2018, [quora.com/Did-the-pagans-actually-worship-statues]

Again, that is exactly what the Catholic Church teaches when they say, "Religious worship is not directed to images in themselves, considered as mere things, but under their distinctive aspect as images leading us on to God incarnate." To an extent, I agree with the concept that a pagan does not believe that the statue itself is a god or goddess, but neither pagans or Catholics understand they they are still guilty of idolatry because they willingly blinding themselves to the meaning of it.

Many pagans and witches do not think they are guilty of idolatry because of this excuse, but something graven that is a representation of something else is still an offense against God because it still represents wicked and false things that lead people away from the truth. So what makes Catholics different than pagans and witches? From a Biblical perspective, nothing. It is the same excuse that pagans and witches will sometimes use to justify themselves, and worse still, some witches have used Catholicism as their justification for idolatry:

*"Wiccans would certainly have difficulty following all 10 commandments and harmonizing them with their own theological and moral beliefs. However, Christians [i.e. Catholics] have similar problems: most don't worship on Saturday; many have statues of the Virgin Mary and crucifixes. Yet they still consider themselves to be Christian."*

-Jeanne Curran & Susan R. Takata, "Syncretic Religion: Wiccans, Witchcraft, and Christianity," *California State University Dominguez Hills*, Aug 12, 2002, retrieved Mar 29, 2018, [www5.csudh.edu/dearhabermas/religion22.htm]

What we just read is a witch looking at the Catholic Church, seeing the striking similarities between witchcraft and Catholicism, and concluding that pagan worship is acceptable since Catholics (who falsely call themselves Christians) do it too. This is no different than a child doing something wrong, and then telling his parents, "But my brother did it too!" Just because one person is guilty of a crime does not give you justification to commit the same crime. Catholics ought to be ashamed of themselves for trying to use these excuses, but they continue to glory in that for which they should be ashamed.

*For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.*

*-Philippians 3:18-19*

Of course, what the Catholic Church will do is claim that they only make idols that represent God, but that makes the Catholic Church *WORSE*, not better, because they take the practices of the heathen, slap a "Jesus" sticker on it, and call it "good."

*Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!*

*-Isaiah 5:20*

worship (v): to adore, to pay divine honors with reverence and veneration

(See 'worship', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Mar 30, 2018,[webstersdictionary1828.com])

To "venerate" an image means that you are worshipping the image because veneration in a religious context is the very definition of worship. Since the Catholic Church says that they "venerate" their statues, it also means that they worship them, even though they try to cover this up by telling the public that they do not worship them, and that their practice of "venerating" their statues is "good," when it is obvious to a child that they worship idols in iniquity.

To borrow a phrase from *Catholic Answers*, it would be "*common sense*" to a ten-year-old that the Catholic Church is practicing idolatry because it is as clear as day, but when a child is bombarded with Catholic lies from the day he is born, he becomes so blinded, he cannot see the forest because the trees are in the way, or in other words, he cannot see the idolatry because all the idols are in the way. So at this point, since the Catholic Church claims they are not guilty of idolatry, I decided to search their Catechism to get a clear definition of what their idolatry means according to them, or more specifically, what is it that they believe distinguishes Catholics from witches?

The Catholic Catechism states:

"Idolatry not only refers to false pagan worship. It remains a constant temptation to faith. Idolatry consists in divinizing what is not God."

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "Idolatry," Part 3, Section 2, Chapter 1, Article 1, Canon #2113, retrieved Mar 29, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc\_css/archive/catechism/p3s2c1a1.htm]

I repeat, the Catholic Church states that idolatry is "divinizing what is not God." I will now demonstrate that the Catholic Church is practicing idolatry by their own definition.



The above image shows Catholics kneeling to worship at the feet of a statue of a figure they call "Mary," giving her divine honors. The Catholic Church will tell you that this is Mary, the virgin who gave birth to Jesus Christ. Because they are giving to Mary that which is reserved for the Lord God alone, that means they are idolaters because they are "divinizing what is not God."

*Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.*

*-Matthew 4:10*

divinize (v): to make divine

divine (adj): of or relating to a god, godlike characteristic of or befitting a deity  
(See 'divinize' & 'divine', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

To understand that more clearly, let's look at some details about the Catholic "Mary," how she is worshiped and venerated as a goddess, and then we will demonstrate that she is *NOT* the Mary, mother of Jesus, talked about in Scripture; she is actually a pagan goddess that is given the name "Mary." Though countless people have prayed unto Mary, the Lord God told us in [Psalm 115:4-8](#) (quoted above) that she has never heard a single prayer from anyone, nor has she spoken to anyone, but Catholics continue to kneel unto an idol nonetheless.

After the sudden death of his mother, an eight-year-old boy named Carol Voityla developed an intense devotion to the Catholic Mary. Later in his life, Voityla would become Pope John Paul II (instituted in 1978), and he formally rededicated himself and his Roman office, not to the Lord Jesus Christ, not to the Word of God, but to Mary. During his tenure as Pope, Voityla often traveled around the world to various "Marian" shrines to worship her statue, and he was followed by millions of other Catholics.



Voityla often used the phrase "*Totus tuus ego sum, Maria,*" which translates, "*I am totally yours, Mary.*" He did not belong to the Lord Jesus Christ; Voityla instead said he belonged to Mary. That is why Voityla's funeral casket had a large letter 'M' burned into the wood; the 'M' stands for "Mary."

Carol Voityla wrote in his last will and testament, which is in the Vatican archives, and it says:

*"I do not know when the moment [of my death] will come, but like everything else, I place it too in the hands of the Mother of my Master: Totus Tuus. In the same maternal Hands I leave everything and everyone with whom my life and vocation have linked me. In these Hands I leave, above all, the [Catholic] Church, as well as my Nation and all humanity."*

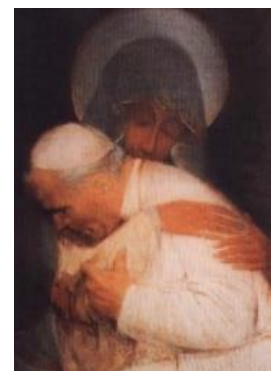
-Pope John Paul II, "Testament of the Holy Father John Paul II," Mar 6, 1979, retrieved Mar 30, 2018, [vatican.va/gpII/documents/testamento-jp-ii\_20050407\_en.html]

Again, Voityla did not put his faith in Christ, but rather, he put his faith in Mary. Because he left his soul in the hands of Mary, he never saw the Kingdom of Heaven, but despite the fact that he died with his hopes in false doctrines, Catholics still highly revere this pagan man.

Voityla continued to say that when he went to judgment (not purgatory?), he was putting all his faith and hope in Mary:

*"Today, I would like to add just this: that everyone keep the prospect of death in mind and be ready to go before the Lord and Judge - and at the same time Redeemer and Father. So I keep this continuously in my mind, entrusting that decisive moment to the Mother of Christ and of the Church - to the Mother of my hope."*

-Pope John Paul II, "Testament of the Holy Father John Paul II," Mar 6, 1979, retrieved Mar 30, 2018, [vatican.va/gpII/documents/testamento-jp-ii\_20050407\_en.html]



The Bible very simply tells us there is one mediator between God and men, and that is the Lord Jesus Christ. If we are to be reconciled to God, the *ONLY* way to do so is through Christ.

mediator (n): one that interposes between parties at variance for the purpose of reconciling them

(See 'mediator', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Mar 30, 2018,[webstersdictionary1828.com])

*For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.*  
-1 Timothy 2:3-6

*For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.*  
-1 Corinthians 3:11

Carol Voitila did not believe the Word of God, and therefore, he did not trust Christ. He decided that Christ was not sufficient, so he put his faith in Mary and ended up in hell, and I have received messages from angry Catholics who are offended that I would say their beloved pope is in hell, but the fact is that he directly taught that Mary is the way that leads to Christ:

*"The history of Christian [i.e. Catholic] piety [fulfillment of religious obligations] teaches that Mary is the way which leads to Christ and that filial devotion [i.e. the devotion a child would give to a parent] to her takes nothing from intimacy with Jesus; indeed, it increases it and leads to the highest levels of perfection."*

-Pope John Paul II, *Devotion to Mary is Based on Jesus' Will*, EWTN (Global Catholic Network), retrieve Mar 30, 2018, [ewtn.com/library/papaldoc/jp2bvm50.htm]; See also Bill McCarthy & James Tibbets, *Mary in the Church Today: Official Catholic Teaching on the Mother of God Since Vatican II*, St Andrews Productions, 2000, p. 374, ISBN: 9781891903229

Notice first that it is the history of Catholic religious traditions that teaches that principles, not the Word of God, so I do not want readers to get confused and think that these things are found somewhere in the Holy Scriptures, because they are not. Furthermore, it is a lie because devotion to Mary most certainly takes away intimacy with Jesus Christ, especially since the Lord God has said He will share His glory with no man, nor will He give His glory to graven images of a false goddess.

*I am the LORD: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images.*  
-Isaiah 42:8

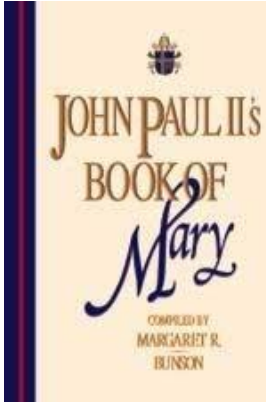
The Bible says there is *ONE* mediator, but the Catholic Church teaches there is more than one mediator. In fact, what really happens in the Catholic Church is that you have to go to a Catholic priest to have him act as a mediator, and then after he gives you his blessing, you have to go to a second mediator, which is their goddess Mary, say a bunch of prayers to her, and then she is expected to go to a third mediator, which is Christ, to plead on your behalf, and then Christ goes to God, and then God gives grace; however, as I have already stated, the major problem with this formula is that those extra mediators are not found in Scripture.

*Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.*  
-John 14:6

*Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.*  
-Matthew 11:28

These verses were not spoken by Mary; Mary did not say she would give men rest. There is *ONE* mediator, the Lord Jesus Christ, and He said that all who come to Him will find rest, and therefore, salvation cannot be found by going to Catholic priests and worshipping statues of Mary.

*John Paul II's Book of Mary* is a collection of Voitila's writings on Mary, which is approved for use by the Catholic Church. In the book, the chapters are titled by the names of worship given by the Catholic Church to Mary; some of those include the following (and I will highlight a few that readers will want to note):



- Gate of Heaven (p. 13)
- Mary Immaculate (p. 33)
- Mediatrice of All Graces (p. 46)
- Mirror of Perfection (p. 60)
- Mother of the Church (p. 73)
- Mother of Mercy (p. 92)
- Pillar of Faith (p. 142)
- Queen of All Saints (p. 159)
- Seat of Wisdom (p. 175)

(See Margaret R. Bunson, *John Paul II's Book of Mary*, Our Sunday Visitor, 2005, Table of Contents, ISBN: 9781592761845)

Giving Mary these titles is the very definition of worship, even according to the Catholic Church's own definition, which is "divinizing what is not God." This means that Catholics are left with two options, either they believe that Mary is not divine, which means the popes and councils of the Catholic Church are liars because Mary could not be all those things unless she was divine, or they believe Mary is divine, which means they are liars when they say they have not committed idolatry because they stated clearly that idolatry is "divinizing what is not God."

When Catholics refer to Mary as the "Mediatrice of All Graces," they are replacing the Lord Jesus Christ by substituting Mary in His place, claiming that she is the mediator between God and men. In other words, they believe you cannot get grace unless you go through Mary.

This is also why they call her the "Gate of Heaven" because a gate is a door that can be opened to allow entrance into something, and therefore, they believe Mary is the way which leads to eternal life in heaven. In previous chapters, we learned that, according to the Catholic Church, in order to get to heaven, you must be a member of the Catholic Church, you must participate in the Mass/Eucharist, you must believe in purgatory, you must use indulgences, you must do good works to earn your way into heaven, and you must also call upon Mary; only then will God give you "grace."

At the very least, Voitila helps us understand the vile idolatry that goes on in the Catholic Church:

*"Mary shares our human condition but in complete openness to the grace of God. Not having known sin, she is able to have compassion on every kind of weakness. She understands sinful man and loves him with a mother's love."*

-John Paul II, quoted by Margaret R. Bunson, *John Paul II's Book of Mary*, Our Sunday Visitor, 2005, p. 18, ISBN: 9781592761845

This is one of the reasons I highlighted the title "Mary Immaculate" and "Mirror of Perfection" because the word 'immaculate' means "pure," or in this context, it means "without sin."

immaculate (adj): free from spot or stain; free from moral blemish; pure; free from fault, flaw, or error

(See 'immaculate', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

Carol Voitila repeats this worshipful title in his last will and testament:

*"I would like once again to entrust myself entirely to the Lord's grace. He Himself will decide when and how I am to end my earthly life and my pastoral ministry. In life and in death [I am] Totus Tuus [totally yours] through Mary Immaculate."*

-Pope John Paul II, "Testament of the Holy Father John Paul II," Mar 6, 1979, retrieved Mar 30, 2018,

[vatican.va/gpII/documents/testamento-jp-ii\_20050407\_en.html]

Voitila spoke of Jesus Christ and grace through Him, but he believed that grace was only granted by and through Mary in her so-called "sinless perfection." If Mary was without sin, then she did not need a savior, and yet, she called God her savior:

*And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Savior.*

*-Luke 1:46-47*

The Catholic Church is very sly in how they present their doctrine, deceiving many people in a snake oil salesman fashion, selling their Catholic "piety" as a formula to supposedly become "holy," in the same manner that snake oil was expected to cure all ailments. Turning again to Tim Staples at *Catholic Answers*, we can see the worship of Catholic goddess in which he salutes and reverences her:

*"Not a few Protestants are surprised to discover the Catholic Church actually agrees that Mary was 'saved.' Indeed, Mary needed a savior!"*

-Tim Staples, "Hail Mary, Conceived Without Sin," *Catholic Answers*, Sept 1, 2007, retrieved Mar 30, 2018, [catholic.com/magazine/print-edition/hail-mary-conceived-without-sin]

Of course, Staples comment has not reflected what I have said yet, but I wanted to pause for a moment to let the reader consider how the scam works; namely, that the Catholic Church tries to tell people that they believe what we Christians believe, but you may have noticed that Staples put the word 'saved' in quotations. That was no accident, and if you continue to read his article, Staples goes on to explain his full meaning, and we can then clearly see how he misleads his readers:

*"However, Mary was 'saved' from sin in a most sublime [supreme] manner. She was given the grace to be 'saved' completely from sin so that she never committed even the slightest transgression."*

-Tim Staples, "Hail Mary, Conceived Without Sin," *Catholic Answers*, Sept 1, 2007, retrieved Mar 30, 2018, [catholic.com/magazine/print-edition/hail-mary-conceived-without-sin]

You can see how Staples says on the one hand that Mary needed a savior, but then puts the word "saved" in quotations because he is secretly defining the word 'saved' as something other than how the Bible defines it. He changed the definition of the word 'saved' as *"being made unable to sin,"* and then saying that she was 'saved' to mislead born again Christians into thinking we are using the same words, phrases, and meanings.

Staples is a liar and deceiver, and I fully believe he knows he is doing it because he is of his father, the Devil, and he spends a lot of time learning these deceptive techniques from his Roman bishop teachers. Staples has, many times attempted to deceive people by trying to make them think we all believe the same thing to lure unsuspected people into Catholicism, which is the Catholic Church's ultimate ecumenical goal. The Catholic Church does not care about who they lie to, they only care about how many people they have marching under their banner.

If what Staples said was true, then Mary should have said, *"my spirit hath rejoiced in God, who made me immaculate,"* but that is not what she said, and if she were alive today to see what is happening in the world, I believe she would vomit in tears of horror in the way she is being lifted up in worship by willingly blind Catholics all over the world. Staples defined 'saved' as *"never committing sin,"* but without sin, there is nothing to be saved from, and the Bible tells us that those who would claim to be without sin are liars, which, if Staples definition were true, would also make Mary a liar:

*If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.*  
-1 John 1:9-10

Thus, even *IF* Mary claimed to have no sin (and there is nothing in the Bible that indicates that), the Bible said she would be a liar. However, the only liars in this situation are Tim Staples of *Catholic Answers*, and the Catholic priests and bishops at large, who put their trust in their goddess, who they call the *"Queen of Heaven."*

The title *"Queen of Heaven"* is interesting because that is the exact same description that witches give to their goddess: *"INANNA: A Sumerian [from the region of Sumer in Babylon] goddess who presided over fertility, love, and war. Known as 'Queen of Heaven'... Offerings were traditionally made to her at sunrise. After the sun sank beneath the horizon and darkness veiled the night sky, she transformed into the patroness of the temple prostitutes. She is identified with the Babylonian goddess Ishtar."*

-Gerina Dunwich, *Wicca A to Z: A Complete Guide to the Magickal World*, Citadel Press, 1997, p. 180, ISBN: 9780806519302; Dunwich is a high priestess of witchcraft and considered a professional astrologer. Ishtar is where we get the pagan celebration of "Easter," read ["Easter: Christians Celebrating Abomination"](#) here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

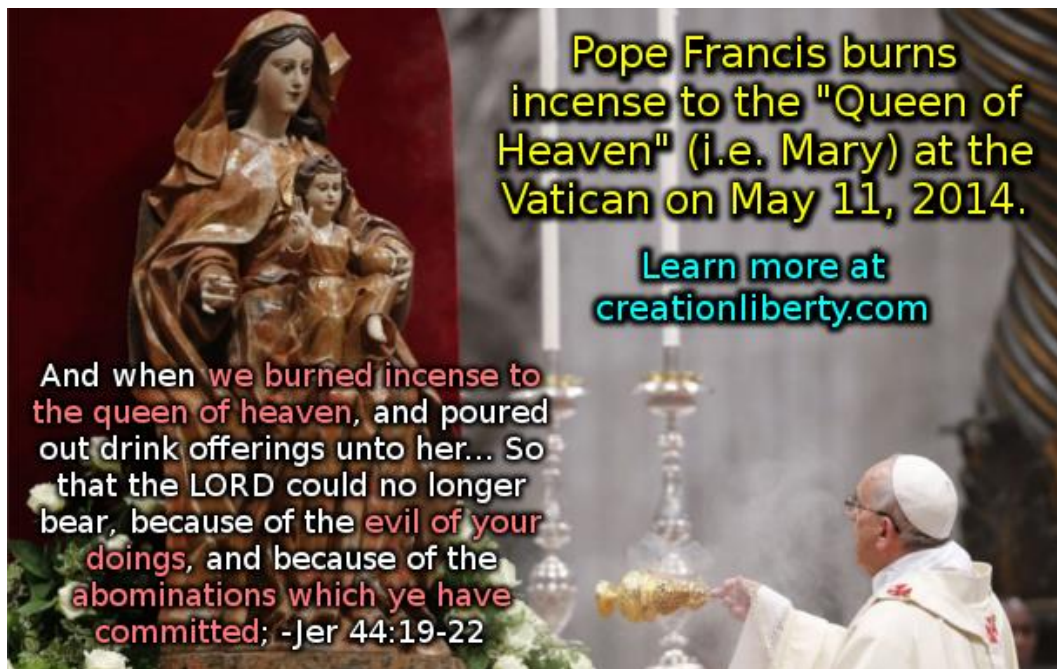


Since Catholics often ignore the Word of God in favor of tradition, they might be surprised to learn that God described the abominations of the Jews when they worshiped the "*Queen of Heaven*." The Jews provoked the anger of God, and He cursed them for their wickedness:

*The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger.*  
-Jeremiah 7:18

*But since we left off to burn incense to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, we have wanted all things, and have been consumed by the sword and by the famine. And when we burned incense to the queen of heaven, and poured out drink offerings unto her, did we make her cakes to worship her, and pour out drink offerings unto her, without our men? Then Jeremiah said unto all the people, to the men, and to the women, and to all the people which had given him that answer, saying, The incense that ye burned in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem, ye, and your fathers, your kings, and your princes, and the people of the land, did not the LORD remember them, and came it not into his mind? So that the LORD could no longer bear, because of the evil of your doings, and because of the abominations which ye have committed; therefore is your land a desolation, and an astonishment, and a curse, without an inhabitant, as at this day.*  
-Jeremiah 44:18-22

Pope Francis I (i.e. Jorge [hor-hey] Bergoglio), for example, does exactly what was described in Jeremiah; namely, he burns incense to the "Queen of Heaven." The Bible clearly stated this is an evil doing that is an abomination in the sight of God, but Catholics continue the practice because they follow tradition instead of the Word of God.



(Image from Stoyan Zaimov, "Celibacy, 'Sexless Virgin Mary' Major Factors in Child Sex Abuse in Catholic Church, Report Claims," *The Christian Post*, Sept 13, 2017, retrieved Mar 30, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2J8Knlt])

The correlation and similarities between the Catholic Mary and the goddess of pagans and witches is very eye-opening if you take the time to compare them. Witches in covens and druids in pagan circles understand very well the symbolism the Catholic Church uses, but most Catholics do not have a clue what they mean because they think those symbols are just a bunch of artwork, and so they sit in blissful and willful ignorance about those things having any meaning whatsoever.



Notice the moon under her feet.

The Catholic Church will claim these are simply depictions of Revelation 12:

*And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars:*  
*-Revelation 12:1*

The Catholics claim this is Mary, but that is not true. Revelation 12:1 is a metaphorical reference to the Christian Church in the final days; it has nothing to do with Mary. The following pagan author writes about the significance of the moon under the feet:

*"Many mythological traditions identify the moon as a feminine counterpart to the masculine sun. For this reason, a number of Goddesses are associated with the moon, including Artemis or Diana, Selena, and of course, Luna. Even the 'Goddess' of Christianity [i.e. Catholicism], the Virgin Mary, has some associations with **the moon under her feet**... So, for Witches, the moon is special because it is a powerful symbol of the Goddess, and therefore of women."*

-Gerina Dunwich, *Wicca A to Z: A Complete Guide to the Magickal World*, Citadel Press, 1997, p. 180, ISBN: 9780806519302; Dunwich is a high priestess of witchcraft and considered a professional astrologer.

What Christians need to understand is that Catholics may claim that these depictions are based on "Mary" in Revelation 12, but in reality, this practice was adopted from pagans in effort to appease Rome. When the Council of Nicaea formed (in 325 A.D.), their purpose was to submit a foundation of beliefs (i.e. their version of "Christianity") to the Roman government, so they could be approved as a legal religion under Rome's protection, and in order to get that approval, they had to make sure that their beliefs did not denounce or offend the pagan religions that already had legal status in Rome (i.e. they could not condemn idols); because of this, it was imperative that the Council of Nicaea reshape Christian doctrine to coincide with the pagan religions of Rome, otherwise, their petition for legal status would be rejected, and this is also what allowed the Catholic Church to grow in popularity, since their beliefs not only coincided with the witchcraft and paganism citizens already practiced, they also attached that pagan belief to Jewish history and the figure of Jesus Christ which was already well known among many cultures. (This is part of the concept behind what the Bible refers to as "Mystery Babylon," and we will go over that later in this book.)

The following author documents the long history of "moon goddess" worship, spanning over thousands of years, starting with Babylon, spreading into Judaism, and later into Roman Catholicism:

*"The cult of the Virgin Mary is a phenomenon in Catholic communities throughout the world... the historical development of the concept of a Moon-Mother Goddess, her beginnings in the Near East five thousand years ago—circa 3,000 BCE, and her ultimate absorption into the Catholic Church as the Blessed Virgin Mary... The examination of the literature related to Goddesses, specifically Moon Goddesses demonstrates that the role of Mary, the mother of Jesus was inherited from the Goddess Isis in ancient Egypt and the Goddess Ishtar in Babylon."*

-Safiya Karimah, *Moon Goddess*, iUniverse, 2003, p. 15, ISBN: 9780595294329



I have received emails from a few witches, and they have all had two similarities:

1. They all told me they were surprised to see how accurate I have been in relating the truth about what pagans believe, and how it relates to various other religions.
2. They all told me that they hated and despised me for exposing their pagan traditions as wickedness and idolatry that would lead them to hell.

I have also received emails from many Catholics over the years, and sadly, they tend to be less familiar with these things, due to the fact that the Catholic Church does its best to cover up their pagan origins. So when I explain to them that Catholicism is one of the world's largest religious cults, they typically express confusion and/or anger, but we Christians need to remember that the Jews would not hear Christ either, even when He spoke to those who believed on him ([John 8:31](#)):

*Then said Jesus to those Jews **which believed on him**, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. -John 8:31-32 Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And **because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.***  
*-John 8:43-45*

When we saw the images of the Catholic goddess and the moon under her feet, you may have noticed it was always a crescent moon. Why is she standing on a crescent moon specifically? That is a pagan tradition, and witch are quite familiar with it:



"The 'Crescent Moon Goddess' is an ancient symbol of change in a woman's life, and her life cycles as they parallel the season of the earth. Historically, the goddess is the symbol of feminine energy and nature's power. With her flowing tresses, she represents a classic image of beauty... This image spans many centuries and appears across many cultures. The design of the crescent moon, which represents the moon when it is located 45 to 90 degrees ahead of the sun, evokes a certain mystical feeling. Not surprisingly, the Crescent Moon has been adopted as a symbol by various religions of the world, including Islam and the Wiccan belief system."

-Patricia L. Cummings, *Redwork Renaissance: 49 Designs from an 1893 Coverlet*, Quilter's Muse Publications, 2004, ISBN: 9780976976318



Indeed, the crescent moon symbol is no coincidence. The Islamic god they call "Allah" is, in fact, a moon god, which is why that symbol is used so frequently by Muslims, even though most Muslims are ignorant of its true origin.

(Read "[Islam: Religion of Terror](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

In short, the crescent moon symbol used in Catholic paintings is the "maiden" symbol in Wicca, part of the "Triple Moon," which represents the three aspects of their goddess. (i.e. maiden, mother, and crone) The maiden crescent moon is used to represent the "virgin" aspect:

*"Triple Moon - Many Wiccans consider the triple moon 'the' definitive symbol of the Goddess. The triple moon consists of a left-facing crescent moon on the left, a full moon in the center, and a right-facing (like a 'C') crescent moon on the right. All three of these are put together in a row to make the triple moon )O(. It represents the three aspects of maiden, mother and crone."*

-David Salisbury, *Teen Spirit Wicca*, John Hunt Publishing, 2014, ISBN: 9781782790587; Salisbury is clergy over a witch coven in Washington DC, and is married to a psychic medium who operates in Maryland.

As we can see, pagans believe the "maiden" crescent moon symbol to be the ultimate way to define their goddess overall, which is why it is used so frequently by correlating pagan religions, like Catholicism and Islam. These types of symbols of the goddess of the pagans is not only found in Catholic paintings and stained-glass windows, but the Catholic Church follows the architectural designs of the pagan goddess in many areas:

*"The major difference between The Goddess and the Blessed Virgin Mary is that The Goddess is a Creatrix in Her Own Right and a source of Divine Power. In Catholicism, Mary is Blessed, unique among women, sinless, The Mother of God - and it is believed that She ascended bodily into Heaven. However, for Catholics, She is supposed to be merely a channel of Power from God, and not a source of Divine Power, Herself. Of course, this is only the official view of the Catholic Church. Many worshipers understand, and have always understood instinctively, if not consciously, that the Blessed Virgin is a modern version of The Goddess; and many Catholic cathedrals are actually built upon the sites of ancient temples to The Great Goddess. For example, St. Peters Cathedral in the Vatican is built right on top of the old temple of The Goddess, Magna Mater, and some parts of the original temple are presumably still left under the foundations."*

-Raven Emrys Aurlineus, "The Catholic Goddess," May 4, 2008, retrieved Nov 20, 2013, [<http://ravenemrys.hubpages.com/hub/The-Catholic-Goddess#>]; Aurlineus has been a witch for over 30 years and is part of the [501c3 incorporated](#) Welsh Traditionalist Coven in Missouri.

In the first chapter of this book, I talked about the Pantheon, which was dedicated by pagans and witches to six gods and six goddesses, which is twelve gods in total, and that is why the Catholic Mary has twelve stars above her head. That depiction has *NOTHING* to do with Revelation twelve, and it has *EVERYTHING* to do with pagan origins. The Catholic Church did not come onto the scene of pagan sites to preach the law of God which condemns the worship of idols, but rather, they claimed ownership of the temple site of the Pantheon, repaired and cleaned it up, and renamed it "St. Mary and the Martyrs," continuing the worship of the pagan goddess on their own terms.

(See J. Bell, *Bell's New Pantheon; or Historical Dictionary of the Gods, Demi-Gods, Heroes*, self-published, Vol. 1, 1790, p. 226, [New York Public Library]; See also George Weigel, *Roman Pilgrimage: The Station Churches*, Basic Books, 2013, p. 387, ISBN: 9780465027699)

As a side note, there are some other commonly used phrases in our society that are initially confusing, but once you understand the origins of Catholicism and their teachings, they begin to make sense; for example, the phrase *alma mater* is often used when one is referring to his or her college or university. (e.g. A man might say, "*Harvard University is my alma mater.*") However, what most people do not understand is that the word *alma* is Latin for "virgin" and *mater* is Latin for "mother," which means when someone says "*that is my alma mater,*" they are actually saying, "*That is my Virgin Mother,*" which refers to the pagan false goddess "Mary" of the Catholic Church; in other words, they are worshipping their own education as a false pagan goddess.

In another example, the phrase "Holy Matrimony" used in modern-day marriage ceremonies (which are also pagan in origin) is rather confusing because the word *matri* is Latin for "matron" or "motherhood." It makes no sense that a man and woman would enter "holy motherhood" when they get married, unless you interpret the meaning by pagan Catholic teaching, in which they are having their marriage approved through the pagan moon goddess.

(Read [The Biblical Understanding of Weddings & Marriage](#) here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Pope John Paul II declared that this pagan goddess will lead them to the truth of Christ:

*"Precisely with her faith as Spouse and Mother she wishes to act upon all those who entrust themselves to her as her children. And it is well known that the more her children persevere and progress in this attitude, the nearer Mary leads them to the 'unsearchable riches of Christ.'"*

-Pope John Paul II, *Redemptoris Mater #46*; Also quoted in John Paul II's Book of Mary, 1996, front page under the cover, ISBN: 0-87973-578-3

Again, that is *NOT* what the Bible teaches us:

*Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power. Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:*  
-Ephesians 3:7-9

There is no mention here of Mary or the pagan goddesses of witchcraft. However, idolatry and witchcraft is mentioned in Galatians, and I believe it is vital that Catholics understand what the Bible says about it:

*Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, **Idolatry, witchcraft**, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that **they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.***  
-Galatians 5:19-21

Despite the warnings God has given us in Scripture, the Catholic Church strictly instructs that all Catholic parishioners worship their pagan goddess "Mary," with the use of the "*marian rosary*," and please note, that is listed under "*obligations*" (i.e. duty) in the Catholic Code of Canon Law:

*With special veneration, they are to honor the Virgin Mother of God, the example and protector of all consecrated [holy] life, also through the marian rosary.*

-Vatican Archives, "Chapter VI. The Obligations and Rights of Institutes and Their Members," Code of Canon Law, Cannon #663 §4, retrieved Apr 25, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ENG1104/\_P28.HTM]

According to *Marians of the Immaculate Conception* (i.e. a conglomerate of Catholic priests dedicated to Mary), performing the marian rosary requires a set of "rosary beads," and the following formula of duties:

"On the 5 decades (sets of 10 beads) of a rosary, we pray and meditate on the corresponding set of 5 Mysteries from the Joyful Mysteries, the Sorrowful Mysteries, the Glorious Mysteries, or the Luminous Mysteries.

1. Make the Sign of the Cross and say the 'Apostles Creed.'

2. Say the 'Our Father.'

3. Say three 'Hail Marys.'

4. Say the 'Glory be to the Father.'

5. Announce the First Mystery; then say the 'Our Father.'

6. Say ten 'Hail Marys,' while meditating on the Mystery.

7. Say the 'Glory be to the Father.' After each decade say the following prayer requested by the Blessed Virgin Mary at Fatima: 'O my Jesus, forgive us our sins, save us from the fires of hell, lead all souls to Heaven, especially those in most need of Thy mercy.'

8. Announce the Second Mystery; then say the 'Our Father.' Repeat 6 and 7 and continue with the Third, Fourth, and Fifth Mysteries in the same manner.

9. Say the 'Hail, Holy Queen' on the medal after the five decades are completed.

The Mysteries traditionally adhere to certain days of the week. Monday: Joyful, Tuesday: Sorrowful, Wednesday: Glorious, Thursday: Luminous, Friday: Sorrowful, Saturday: Joyful, Sunday: Glorious"

-*Marians of the Immaculate Conception*, "How to Pray the Rosary," retrieved Apr 25, 2018, [marian.org/mary/rosary/howto.php]; The cross symbol is an offense against God's Word - read "[Christian Symbols Are Not Christian](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Without getting into too much detail, the "Our Fathers," "Hail Marys," and all the other things they listed out are a group of phrases that are repeated over and over. You can look them up on your own if you want to, but listing them out here would be a waste of time, and the reason for that is because it is what the Bible calls "*vain repetitions*," and the Lord Jesus Christ made the matter very easy for us to understand.

In an earlier chapter, we covered how the Catholic Church is devouring widows' houses, and in that same verse, Christ points out that those who make long, drawn-out prayers for pretense (i.e. for show) will end up in hell:

*Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.*

*-Matthew 23:14*

*Which devour widows' houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.*

*-Luke 20:47*

Many false religious institutions use long prayers for pretense; it is not just the Catholic Church. They put on a show for their prayers, to be seen among men, but Jesus told us we should pray such things in secret:

*But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.*

*-Matthew 6:8*

(Read "[The Biblical Understanding of Prayer](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

In case you did not understand, the Lord Jesus Christ will *NOT* hear any of the vain repetitious prayers of Catholics. That will certainly make many Catholics angry, because they have been taught that God listens to every prayer no matter what, and so rather than face the truth, they find it easier to just ignore the warnings of Jesus Christ, accuse me of evil.

In the same manner, the Jews were working wickedness in their pagan traditions and would not come to repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing), the Lord God also told them He would not hear their prayers:

*And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide mine eyes from you: yea, when ye make many prayers, I will not hear: your hands are full of blood. Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to do evil;*

*-Isaiah 1:15-16*

Catholics sing their songs every week, just as the Jews did, but because of their wickedness, God said He would not hear their songs, and Jesus said that they worship Him in vain:

*Take thou away from me the noise of thy songs; for I will not hear the melody of thy viols. But let judgment run down as waters, and righteousness as a mighty stream.*

*-Amos 5:23-24*

*Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*

*-Mark 7:7*

They worship God in vain because they follow the commandments of the Catholic Church to bow before a pagan goddess, reverencing her as divinity, which violates their own definition of idolatry:

*"To foster [support] the sanctification [separation for a holy use] of the people of God, the Church commends [charges/instructs] to the special and filial [child-to-parent] reverence [fear, respect and esteem] of the Christian faithful the Blessed Mary ever Virgin, Mother of God, whom Christ established as the mother of all people, and promotes the true and authentic veneration [highest degree of honor] of the other saints whose example instructs the Christian faithful and whose intercession sustains them."*

*-Canon 1186, quoted by John P. Beal, *New Commentary on the Code of Canon Law*, Paulist Press, 2000, p. 1413, ISBN: 9780809105021*

Notice that it says she is "Mary EVER Virgin," meaning that she is claimed to forever hold the status of "maiden," which is exactly what the witches believe about their goddess. It should be noted that Mary gave birth to other children, which means she did not remain a virgin in the flesh, nor is there such thing as a "spiritual virginity" in that context, and thus, the Catholic Church pulled that idea from the pagans, not from Scripture.

Catholics are obsessed with calling Mary blessed for bearing Jesus in the womb and feeding Him from her breast, and so they love to quote Luke 11:27, which says:

*And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.*

*-Luke 11:27*

But they rarely quote Jesus in the next verse:

*But he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.*

*-Luke 11:28*

If we are to hear the Word of God and keep it, then I say to all Catholics that in order to flee from idolatry, you must first flee from the Catholic Church.

flee (v): to run with rapidity; to hasten away

(See 'flee', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Oct 24, 2020, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

*Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.*

*-1 Corinthians 10:14*

## #7 – The Pope: Throne of an Antichrist

The Catholic Dictionary, *New Advent*, gives us a definition of "The Pope:"

*"The title pope, once used with far greater latitude, is at present employed solely to denote the Bishop of Rome, who, in virtue of his position as successor of St. Peter, is the chief pastor of the whole Church, the Vicar of Christ upon earth."*

-Kevin Knight, "The Pope," *New Advent*, retrieved Apr 27, 2018, [newadvent.org/cathen/12260a.htm]



There is only one position of "*chief pastor*" in the church, and that belongs to the Lord Jesus Christ alone. It just so happens that who Catholics call "*Saint Peter*" (i.e. Peter the apostle) also taught that Jesus is that chief pastor.

(Read "[Titles Are Unbiblical in the Church](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details; the apostles did not use fancy titles like "Saint Peter" or "Pastor Peter" or "Apostle Peter," nor was the church ever commanded to do such things.)

*And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*  
-1 Peter 5:4

The sickening thing about this is that the Catholic Church will somewhat agree with me about the authority of Jesus Christ, however, they will not agree about the identity and office of their beloved pope. That leaves us with some important questions: What is the "*Vicar of Christ*?" What exactly does that mean? Why do they elect men to take this position?

A 'vicar' is a person who is authorized to perform the functions and duties of someone else. In the context of the Catholic Church, the Pope is considered to be "Christ on earth," or to have the seat and authority of Christ Himself.

vicar (n): In a general sense, a person deputed or authorized to perform the functions of another; a substitute in office. **The pope pretends to be vicar of Jesus Christ on earth.**

(See 'vicar', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Apr 27, 2018,[webstersdictionary1828.com])

The Bible never mentions such a position as the "Vicar of Christ," but the Bible does tell us there would be false Christs that would arise:

*For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.*  
-Matthew 24:24



Namely, these men are called "antichrists," and the Bible also tells us there would be many antichrists before the final antichrist (i.e. the son of perdition):

*Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.*  
-1 John 2:18

Though the Latin origins of the word 'vicar' means "substitute," when the word is translated into Greek (i.e. *vicarious christi*), it takes on a whole new meaning:

*"But in process of time, by a strange perversion of the original meaning of the word, Vicarius, came to be understood by the adulators of the See of Rome, in the opposite sense of a 'vicegerent' [vice-office] or 'deputy.' And thus, by an ominous fatality [the forboding of something deadly], the title Vicar of Christ, most unwittingly [i.e. done without understanding], and in disgrace of the boasted infallibility of the Roman Pontiffs, became the exact rendering of the obnoxious [offensive] term [\*Greek spelling\*] 'Antichrist:'"... [The book goes on to break down the Greek composition.]... And thus, by a singular circumstance, Gregory the Great [Pope Gregory I, 590-604] became himself the 'forerunner of Antichrist,' by assuming the inauspicious [ill-omened and unfavorable] title of Vicarius Christi, perverted by his successors into the name of blasphemy,"*

-*The Antijacobin Review and Magazine*, Vol. 27, Sherwood, Neely, and Jones, Paternoster-Row, 1807, p. 511; See also William Hales & John T. Troy, *Letters on the Religious and Political Tenets of the Roman Hierarchy*, Oxford University, 1813, p. 45

It is amazing to think that this was started over a simple misunderstanding of Scripture, but that is how all false religious cults establish their foundations. Peter, by the Holy Spirit, warned the church:

*And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you; As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest [twist, distort], as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction. Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness. But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.*  
-2 Peter 3:16-18

Later, we will go over some of the dark history behind the popes and the Catholic Church, and hopefully, readers will more clearly see why the "Vicar of Christ" is so accurately described as "antichrist." However, before we get to that, let's address the Biblical fallacies of Catholic claims for the authority of their popes.

As *New Advent* stated in the quote at the beginning of this chapter, Catholics believe that Peter was the first Pope, and that all subsequent popes are his successors. The website continues to say:

*"The proof that Christ constituted St. Peter head of His Church is found in the two famous Petrine texts [i.e. texts related to Peter's writings], Matthew 16:17-19, and John 21:15-17."*

-Kevin Knight, "The Pope," *New Advent*, retrieved Apr 27, 2018, [newadvent.org/cathen/12260a.htm]

*And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.*  
-*Matthew 16:17-19*

What you may commonly see on the internet and in various teachings from preachers is an argument about the Greek words for Peter and rock, how they are different, and that Peter means little rock or pebble (*petros*) and that is different than the big rock of Jesus, but I will not be making that argument because it is foolish, and besides, it carries no weight with Catholics anyway because most Catholics are already prepared with ten different excuses for such a flimsy claim. Those who teach such nonsense not only fall prey to the "original Greek" scam, but it also sets a terrible example to new Christians who will be led down a deceptive path, thinking that they cannot understand certain verses in the Bible without known Koine Greek.

(Read "[The 'Original Greek' Scam](#)" & "[Why I Use The King James Bible](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

We have no need for weak arguments if we simply trust in the Lord and use His Word, as He intended for us to do:

*For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

*-Hebrews 4:12*

By simply using the doctrine and context of Scripture alone, I will demonstrate that, once again, the Catholic Church has no understanding of Biblical doctrine. These verses *NEVER* make Peter the "Vicar of Christ," nor was any such thing ever taught in the New Testament, and we will begin by looking at the context in the preceding verses:

*When Jesus came into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of man am? And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist: some, Elias [Elijah]; and others, Jeremias [Jeremiah], or one of the prophets. He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?*

*-Matthew 16:13-15*

Jesus is not asking these questions looking for understanding because Jesus is God and knows all things, including the hearts of men and the answers they will give to His questions. Jesus is asking these questions because he wants them to confess the truth, having faith that He is the Son of God (i.e. Emmanuel, meaning "God with us," [Mat 1:23](#)), and therefore, the context of these verses is concerning **faith that Jesus is the Son of God**.

*And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.*

*-Matthew 16:16*

Despite what many other Jews believed, Peter believed that Christ is God, specifically the Son of God, come to earth in the flesh. Again, the context is about **faith that Jesus is the Son of God**.

*And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.*

*-Matthew 16:17*

It was not by Peter's own intellect that he knew Jesus is the Son of God, but God revealed it to Peter because of his humility and faith. Once again, the context in these verses is about **faith that Jesus is the Son of God**.

*And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.*

*-Matthew 16:18*

The name 'Peter' means "rock," and because of that, the Catholic Church has hinged their 1700 years of papal hierarchy on the definition of Peter's name. I understand that it may be hard to believe because it seems so absurd, but this is the Catholic Church's primary reasoning for their absurd doctrine. Notice that Christ did *NOT* say, "upon *THEE* I will build my church;" He said "upon *THIS ROCK* I will build my church." The context, as we have seen multiple times already, is **faith that Jesus is the Son of God**, and thus, upon "this rock" (i.e. faith that Jesus is the Son of God) is the foundation (rock) on which Christ will build His church.

The context is very clear, and this simple doctrine can be backed up by *MANY* verses. Please read the following Scripture and then decide if you believe the Bible teaches that the rock is Peter, or if you believe the Bible teaches that the rock is Christ:

*For who is God, save the LORD? and who is a rock, save our God?*

*-2 Samuel 22:32*

*He shall cry unto me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation.*

*-Psalm 89:26*

*He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.*

*-Deuteronomy 32:4*

*But Jeshurun waxed fat, and kicked: thou art waxen fat, thou art grown thick, thou art covered with fatness; then he forsook God which made him, and lightly esteemed the Rock of his salvation.*

*-Deuteronomy 32:15*

*Of the Rock that begat thee thou art unmindful, and hast forgotten God that formed thee.*

*-Deuteronomy 32:18*

*To shew that the LORD is upright: he is my rock, and there is no unrighteousness in him.*

*-Psalm 92:15*

*There is none holy as the LORD: for there is none beside thee: neither is there any rock like our God.*

*-1 Samuel 2:2*

*And he said, The LORD is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer;*

*-2 Samuel 22:2*

*The LORD liveth; and blessed be my rock; and exalted be the God of the rock of my salvation.*

*-2 Samuel 22:47*

*The LORD liveth; and blessed be my rock; and let the God of my salvation be exalted.*

*-Psalm 18:46*

*Unto thee will I cry, O LORD my rock; be not silent to me: lest, if thou be silent to me, I become like them that go down into the pit.*

*-Psalm 28:1*

*Because thou hast forgotten the God of thy salvation, and hast not been mindful of the rock of thy strength, therefore shalt thou plant pleasant plants, and shalt set it with strange slips:*

*-Isaiah 17:10*

*For thou art my rock and my fortress; therefore for thy name's sake lead me, and guide me.*

*-Psalm 31:3*

*I will say unto God my rock, Why hast thou forgotten me? why go I mourning because of the oppression of the enemy?*

*-Psalm 42:9*

*He only is my rock and my salvation: he is my defence; I shall not be moved.*

*-Psalm 62:6*

*And they remembered that God was their rock, and the high God their redeemer.*

*-Psalm 78:35*

*O come, let us sing unto the LORD: let us make a joyful noise to the rock of our salvation.  
-Psalm 95:1*

*And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both the houses of Israel, for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem.  
-Isaiah 8:14*

Of course, some scoffing Catholics may retort that this was just in the Old Testament, and things have changed the New Testament, but they are ignorant that the New Testament is the *FULFILLMENT* of the Old Testament, and so let's go to the New Testament to verify the doctrine:

*And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them:  
and that Rock was Christ.  
-1 Corinthians 10:4*

There are many more verses beyond this that could be used to demonstrate the point, but this should be more than sufficient to prove what I am teaching, namely, that it is absurd to think that Peter, a mere man, or the wicked popes of the Catholic Church, could ever be our Rock of Salvation. The Lord Jesus Christ abhors such wicked doctrine, and if Peter were alive, he would also hate such a thing and rebuke it. Jesus Christ has always been mankind's Rock of Salvation, the sole authority and head over the church:

*That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.  
-Ephesians 1:17-23*

There is no man who has been given any authority to be a chief pastor in this world. Jesus Christ is the only head of the church, and though there are elders and deacons to oversee matters in the church, Jesus is the only chief pastor there will ever be.

If Peter is such an important head of the whole church, then why was he not mentioned anywhere in those verses of Ephesians? Did you see anything in those verses about a pope or a priest? If Peter was the head of the church of Jesus Christ, then Paul would surely have acknowledged Peter somewhere in these verses, but there is no mention of him, nor does Peter ever mention himself having such a role in any of the letters he wrote.

Jesus continues to explain His doctrine in Matthew 16:



"NO, NO, NO--! YOU'RE SUPPOSED TO BE COMING IN THRU GATE 7-- AND LOSE THE LUGGAGE!!"

*And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.  
-Matthew 16:19*

There are some Christians today who struggle understanding this verse due to corrupt Catholic influence. Catholics interpret this to mean that Peter has ultimate authority to decide who stays and who goes in heaven, which is why so many people have seen the cartoons with Peter standing outside the gates of heaven allowing people entrance or rejecting them, but this is not anywhere close to the doctrine that's being taught in verse 19.

The proper interpretation of this is given two chapters later in Matthew 18:

*Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.*  
 -Matthew 18:15-18

This is something that is rarely seen today because most pastors in modern-day church buildings are treated (and want to be treated) like the sole ruling authority over the church, like a king or a pope, and because they are looking for their person to be respected, most preachers will not remove anyone from the church building because they will lose the respect and money they love so dearly. In most cases, the person that gets removed from the church building is someone who dares to question the unbiblical practices of a pastor, and in that scenario, the person is most often removed by the pastor alone, instead of by the consideration of the entire church to hear the matter and have a discussion.

When a member is accepted into the church, they have been "binded" into the body, but if they are put out of the body, they are "loosed" back into the world. Jesus Christ gave the disciples authority to bind and loose from the church, and whatsoever they bound and loosed, would be also done so in heaven, but even though He gave His disciples special authority, He did not leave it to them alone because the entire congregation was to be involved as eye-witnesses, so there was no confusion and the offender was given every opportunity for repentance. (Again, I emphasize that this is almost *NEVER* done in church buildings today.)

So when Jesus said He would give the keys to the kingdom of heaven to His disciples, what does that mean? At the very least, we know that it does *NOT* mean Peter is standing at the gates of heaven with a keyring ready to reject anyone on his 'naughty' list. It means the disciples of Jesus had the special authority to "bind" and "loose" from the church, and the same would be done in heaven based on that authority Christ gave to *ALL* of them (including the whole church), but **nowhere in these verses is it even remotely implied that Peter is the head of all Christendom, and that he must pass off his scepter of rulership to other men throughout the ages to be the so-called "holy" Pope.**

Again, in the New Testament church, we have elders and deacons to oversee certain matters, but outside of that, there is no religious hierarchy. In fact, Jesus explicitly stated that it is the world that operates according to such hierarchies, but the church was *NOT* to do any such thing.

*But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. But **it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.***

-Matthew 20:25-28



Furthermore, if Peter was supposed to be the first "Vicar" over the church, why is he not mentioned in Paul's list of greetings to the church in Rome? In Romans 16, Paul greets many of those in the Roman church, including other evangelists and apostles, but Peter is *NEVER* mentioned in that letter. If you wrote a letter to the staff in the United States White House, but did not mention the President, that would be rather odd, and quite insulting. In fact, there is no Scriptural evidence that Peter ever visited the church in Rome, meaning that he may never have stepped foot in Rome, but the Catholic Church puts their faith, hope, and structure of everything they say and do on the basis of a doctrine that has no supporting evidence.

Even though dedicated Catholics want to believe that it is a "self-evident" fact that Peter was the first "Pope" of the Catholic Church, even *Britannica Encyclopedia* admits that there is no evidence for that belief:

*"The identification of this obvious primacy [office] of Peter in the New Testament with the primacy of the church of Rome is not self-evident. For one thing, the New Testament is almost silent about a connection between Peter and Rome. The reference at the close of the Acts of the Apostles to the arrival of the Apostle Paul in Rome gives no indication that Peter was there as the leader of the Christian community or even as a resident, and the epistle that Paul had addressed somewhat earlier to the church at Rome devotes its entire closing chapter to greetings addressed to many believers in the city but fails to mention Peter's name."*

-Francis C. Oakley & Jaroslav J. Pelikan, "Roman Catholicism - The emergence of Roman Catholicism," *Britannica Encyclopedia*, retrieved Nov 16, 2017, [britannica.com/topic/Roman-Catholicism]

This is why Catholics like to use the term "self-evident" when asked for evidence for their claims. Essentially, it is a quick, professional-sounding, go-to phrase they can quickly pull out when they are backed into a corner without any evidence to show for what they believe.

The reason for this is because, if you look closely, the Catechism of the Catholic Church openly states that Catholics do not follow the Bible when it comes to such matters:

*"As a result the [Catholic] Church, to whom the transmission and interpretation of Revelation is entrusted, 'does not derive her certainty about all revealed truths from the holy Scriptures alone. Both Scripture and Tradition must be accepted and honored with equal sentiments of devotion and reverence.'"*

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "The Transmission of Divine Revelation," Part 1, Section 1, Chapter 2, Article 2, Canon #82, retrieved Apr 27, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc\_css/archive/catechism/p1s1c2a2.htm]

Before we continue, it should be noted that this statement means the Catholic Church believes that their priests are the holders of all divine revelation, meaning that if you want to understand God's Word, you have to go to them, under their private institution. This is another violation of the doctrine of Scripture:

*Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation.*

*-2 Peter 1:20*

*These things have I written unto you concerning them that seduce you. But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.*

*-1 John 2:26-27*

If you ask a Catholic what Scriptural evidence that they have that Peter was the first Pope, if they will be honest, they must respond that it is not based on Scripture. However, I doubt you will ever meet a Catholic who is knowledgeable enough about their religious institution (and in some cases. they will not be honest enough) to tell you the truth openly. The simple fact is that they blindly follow tradition.

*Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*

*-Mark 7:7*

*New Advent* also claimed John 21, concerning the commandment to "*feed my sheep*," as evidence that Peter was the first Pope:

*So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs. He saith to him again the second time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep. He saith unto him the third time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.*  
-John 21:15-17

The Catholic Church takes this to mean that Jesus gave a personal commandment to Peter only, and that "*feed my sheep*" was Christ establishing a special office of a pope, which is not only absurd, but as we are about to read, Peter himself wrote that it was *ALL* the elders that were to feed the sheep, not just Peter. He also told them they were *NOT* to be lords over the flock, as the popes of Rome have done, and he told them that they were *NOT* to seek after filthy lucre (i.e. money), which priests and popes have done for centuries through the false doctrine of purgatory and indulgences, as we covered in earlier chapters of this book.

*The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre [i.e. not to receive a paycheck], but of a ready mind; Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock. And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*  
-1 Peter 5:1-4

Why would Peter not refer to *HIMSELF* as the "Chief Shepherd?" He called Jesus Christ the Chief Shepherd. However, on the basis that Jesus told Peter to feed his sheep, Catholics insist this is enough evidence to create a "Vicar of Christ."

Some readers may think that is so absurd, that there is no way that is what Catholics really believe, but you do not have to take my word for it, let's continue to read *New Advent's* article:

*"He saith to him, 'Feed my sheep'. Why does He pass over the others and speak of the sheep to Peter?... I should reply that He made Peter the teacher not of that see but of the whole world."*

-Kevin Knight, "The Pope," *New Advent*, retrieved Apr 27, 2018, [newadvent.org/cathen/12260a.htm]

In case you missed it, what *New Advent*, a Catholic-approved website, stated was that when Jesus told Peter to feed His sheep, they took that to mean that Peter was given global religious authority over all mankind. What Catholics do not understand is that all Christians were given the authority to teach the whole world the doctrines of Jesus, and when He gave us all this commandment, He said that all authority belonged to Himself; not Peter, nor the a pope:

*And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.*  
-Matthew 28:18-20

So why did Christ speak specifically to Peter about feeding His sheep, or in other words, why did Christ speak to Peter about teaching the truth of His Word to the church? Why did He specifically ask Peter three times? Because Peter denied Him three times, and Christ was showing him mercy three times:

*Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended. Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.*  
-Matthew 26:33-34

And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

-Matthew 26:75

There is absolutely no context here for creating a Roman Pontiff (i.e. Pope) that rules over all. Catholics teach false doctrine that the "rock" is Peter instead of Christ, and then they say the Pope is the sole leader over the whole world on the basis of Christ telling Peter three times to "feed my sheep." Due to the size and splendor of the Catholic Church, many people refuse to believe that their entire foundation is built on something so absurd, but whether you believe it or not, that is all they have, and everything else that follows the ridiculous foundation they have constructed is tradition based on the fanciful imaginations of popes and bishops throughout the past 1700 years.

I have spoken personally with Catholics who insist that Peter is the "rock" because (as I mentioned earlier) Christ called him 'Peter', which means "rock." However, if we approach Scripture the way that Catholics do, then we would have to conclude that Peter is also Satan because immediately after Christ named Simon "Peter," He called Peter by the name of the Devil:

But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

-Matthew 16:23

This shows us that there is an inconsistency in Catholic doctrine; meaning that they will not apply their methods of interpretation to all areas of Scripture, but rather, they will only apply them to areas which help them to justify what they want to believe. This hypocritical inconsistency in doctrine is what the Bible calls "double minded," meaning that they flip-flop like a politician whenever it suits them.

A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.

-James 1:8

The fact is that the "Vicar of Christ" was not invented until 325 A.D. when Constantine and his cohorts created the position to usurp Christ's authority on earth. (Though there may not have been the title of "Pope" in 325 A.D., the philosophical concept was born with Constantine.) Despite what Catholics might want to believe, the Roman Pontiff (i.e. Pope) was always believed to be God Himself, and if Catholics would come to repentance (i.e. godly sorrow of their idolatry), be willing do a little historical research, and stop blindly trusting in priests, God would show them the truth.

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

-2 Timothy 2:15

Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

-Matthew 7:7-8

Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.

-Jeremiah 17:5



The following is an ancient Roman Catholic document (*Glossary in Extravagantes Johannes*) that calls the Pope the "Lord God." Indeed, Catholic doctrine, taught properly, teaches that the Pope is God, and the most dedicated Catholics know this:

**Century XIV.**

**ZENZELINUS DE CASSANIS.**

"Our Lord God  
the Pope"

Crederet autem Dominum Deum nostrum Papam—conditorem dictae decretalis, et istius, sic non potuisse statuere, prout statuit, haereticum censeretur.—Gloss. in Extrav. Jo. xxii. Tit. 14, c. 4, in fin., col. 140, F., T. 3, Corp. Jur. Can.

But to believe that our Lord God the Pope, the establisher of said decretal, and of this, could not decree, as he did decree, should be accounted heretical.

[Learn more at creationliberty.com](http://www.creationliberty.com)

*"But to believe that our Lord God the Pope, the establisher of said decretal, and of this, could not decree, as he did decree, should be accounted heretical."*

-John H. Treat, *The Catholic Faith, Or, Doctrines of the Church of Rome Contrary to Scripture and the Teaching of the Primitive Church*, Bishop Welles Brotherhood, 1888, p. 536, [Harvard University]

When speaking with the public, Catholic priests typically stand on pretense and lie by telling people that the Pope is just a "substitute" for Christ. However, what most people do not know is that **the Catholic Church believes and teaches their Pope IS God in the flesh**, and past popes have declared it in official decrees.

For those Catholics who still may not believe that an anathema from the Catholic Church is a condemnation to hell, perhaps they will listen to Pope Boniface VIII (8th, 1294-1303), who teaches that you must believe on the Catholic Pope to be saved:

*"Furthermore, we declare, we proclaim, we define that it is absolutely necessary for salvation that every human creature be subject to the Roman Pontiff."*



-Pope Boniface VIII, "Unam Sanctam", *Papal Encyclicals Online*, Nov 18, 1302, retrieved Apr 27, 2018, [papalencyclicals.net/Bon08/B8unam.htm]

Once you understand the corrupt pagan philosophy behind the Catholic Church, such a statement is not surprising, and to make sure readers understand, the Catholic Pope is considered to be Christ on earth, and to have taken His place on the cross. *Zenit*, a news agency in Rome, documented a statement from Roman Catholic Bishop Patrick Dunn of Auckland when he commented on Pope John Paul II's condition in the final days of his life:

*"It seems that Pope John Paul II now presides over the universal Church from his place upon Christ's cross,' said Bishop Dunn, who traveled with seven other prelates to Rome."*

-Zenit Staff, "Auckland Bishop Says Pope Presides From the Cross," *Zenit*, Sept 21, 2004, retrieved Apr 27, 2018, [zenit.org/articles/auckland-bishop-says-pope-presides-from-the-cross]

Sadly, because of the deception of the ecumenical (i.e. one-world religious) movement, many Catholics think that born again Christians and Catholics believe mostly the same things, but the truth is that Catholics serve a different "god" than we do, and they serve a different "christ" than we do. The following is a letter that was received by Friar Septimus Andrews from Venetian priest Don Marino, who translated the words of the letter he received from Cardinal Joseph Sarto, January 10, 1896:

*"Dear Don Marino—I have read all the homilies I have made since my coming here in Venice, and only in the sermon for the anniversary of the election of the Holy Father, I said these exact words: The Pope represents Jesus Christ Himself, and therefore is a loving Father."*

-Joseph Sarto, quoted by Marino Tommates, *Publications of the Catholic Truth Society*, Vol. 29, 1896, p. 11, [New York Public Library]

If the Catholic Pope truly represented Jesus Christ on earth, he would not highly esteemed with huge parades in his honor, and housed in lavish buildings made of gold and silver. Rather, he would have to be lowly, meek, and humble:

*And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.*

-Matthew 8:20

Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls.

-Matthew 11:29

Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy;

-1 Timothy 6:17

I have often heard Catholics argue that the Pope only represents Christ on earth, and that he is not divine, but again, that is because they do not know the truth about what the Catholic Church really believes and teaches. That is only a convenient response they can give to hide their ignorance of Catholic doctrine. The truth is the popes of Rome have always considered themselves to be Christ Himself:

"Side by side with the shameless worship of the Virgin in the Church of Rome is the Divine honour paid to the Pope. He has been adored upon the altar, solemnly proclaimed the Vicar of Christ, Ruler of the World, Lord of Lords, the Almighty Vice-general of God, God upon earth, our Lord God. The Pope's official organ [publication] has asserted, that 'when he thinks it is God that thinks in him, and he is to Christians all that Jesus Christ would be were He now upon earth.' This blasphemous homage was not reprov'd by Pius IX [9th]; it has never been condemned by Leo XIII [8th]."

-Lord Halifax, *Leamington Country Chronicle*, Oct 26, 1895, quoted in *Publications of the Catholic Truth Society*, Vol. 29, 1896, p. 11, [New York Public Library]

The above author provided a list of names by which the Catholic Pope has been called, and never once have the popes of Rome ever rebuked such lavish titles. Catholic priests attempt to explain away the doctrine of a pope's claim to divinity as just a "representation" of Jesus, but that is no different than Catholics trying to cover up their idolatry by claiming that a statue is just a "representation" of Mary. In short, this is the same idolatry in another form, and Catholics desperately try to plug up the breached dam of obvious blasphemy and heresy that floods the Catholic Church.

If you are wondering how the head of the Catholic Church went from man to godhood, you need to look no further than Rome because the Roman Emperor was also considered to be a god on earth:

"On his death, Julius Caesar was officially recognized as a god, the Divine ('Divus') Julius, by the Roman state. And in 29 BC Caesar's adopted son, the first Roman emperor Augustus, allowed the culturally Greek cities of Asia Minor to set up temples to him. This was really the first manifestation of Roman emperor-worship... Emperor-worship was a unifying factor in the Roman world, practiced not only by army units spread throughout the empire but also by individuals in the provinces, where there were collective imperial cult centres at places such as Lyons (Gaul), Pergamon (Asia) and (probably) Colchester (Britain)."

-Nigel Pollard, "Roman Religion Gallery: The Imperial Cult," *BBC History*, Feb 17, 2011, retrieved Sept 6, 2018, [bbc.co.uk/history/ancient/romans/roman\_religion\_gallery\_06.shtml]

The worship of the Roman Emperor was a unifying feature, and that is exactly how the Catholic Pope is treated, having people from many different religions and culture worship together at his feet, lining up just to shake his hand and kiss his ring. If you want a more accurate date for philosophical beginnings of the Roman Catholic Church, I would say 27 BC would be more precise, since that was the year Augustus was appointed Roman Emperor to handle a national emergency, and after the crisis was over, Augustus and the subsequent emperors never gave their power back to the people, producing five centuries of tyrannical conquest.

(See Donald L. Wasson, "Roman Emperor," *Ancient History Encyclopedia*, Apr 30, 2018, retrieved Dec 5, 2020, [https://bit.ly/3orE5Bv])

The Catholic Church calls Constantine (the actual first pope) a "god on earth:"

"Pope Nicolas saith: Constat summum Pontificem a pio Principe... Deum appellatum ('It is well-known that the Pope of the godly prince Constantine was called God'). Likewise the Pope was well content to suffer one of his parasites [one who flatters in exchange for hospitality] to say unto him in the late Council of Lateran: Tu es alter Deus in terris ('Thou art another God on earth'). Likewise Cardillus the Spandiard, in defence of the Pope's late chapter at Trident, oftentimes calleth the Pope a Terrenus Deus ('an earthly God')."

-*Publications of the Catholic Truth Society*, Vol. 29, 1896, p. 18, [New York Public Library]; Gratiani Decretum, xcvi, can. 7; See also Defence of Apology, Part 5, Chapter 6, Div. 11, p. 583

To give an example of such parasites, Christopher Marcellus gave an address to Pope Julius II during the Fifth Lateran Council in 1512, in which he said:

"Take care that we lose not that salvation, that life and breath which thou hast given us, for thou art our shepherd, thou art our physician, thou art our governor, thou art our husbandman, thou art finally another God on earth."

-Christopher Marcellus, Fifth Lateran Council, 1512, quoted by Edward Hendrie, *Antichrist: The Beast Revealed*, 2015, p. 215, ISBN: 9780983262787

Robert Bellarmine, Italian Jesuit and cardinal of the Catholic Church, who was also canonized to be a "saint" of the Catholic Church in 1930, said:

"All names which in the Scriptures are applied to Christ, by virtue of which it is established that he is over the church, all the same names are applied to the Pope."

-Robert Bellarmine, *Bellarmino on the Authority of the Councils*, Vol. 1, Book 2, Ch. 17, 1628, p. 266, quoted in *The Protestant Magazine*, Vol 7, 1915, p. 86

Again, no Catholic Pope throughout the centuries has ever renounced or rebuked these glorious titles to describe themselves. Of course, these sources are from those exposing the Catholic Church, so let's look at some examples from official papal decrees.



Pope Pius X (10th, Guiseppe Sarto, 1903-1914) was published in an 1895 edition of the *Catholic National* magazine, in which he said:

"The Pope is not only the representative of Jesus Christ, but He is Jesus Christ Himself, hidden under the veil of the flesh. Does the Pope speak? It is Jesus Christ that speaks. Does the Pope accord a favor or pronounce an anathema? It is Jesus Christ who pronounces the anathema or accords the favor. So that when the Pope speaks, we have no business to examine—we have only to obey. We have no right to criticize his decisions or discuss his commands. Therefore every one who would wear the crown [king of a nation] ought to submit himself to Divine Right."

-Pope Pius X, quoted the *Protestant Alliance Magazine*, 1922, by William C. Irvine, *Is Roman Catholicism Biblical?*, CrossReach Publications, 2018; See also *Publications of the Catholic Truth Society*, Vol. 29, 1896, p. 10, [New York Public Library]

Please take a moment to consider that Pope Pius was saying that his spirit is actually the Holy Spirit of the Godhead, meaning that if one claims to be Jesus Christ, one would also have to claim that he is God the Father come to earth. Therefore, those Catholics who try to claim that the Pope is just a "representative of Jesus Christ" not only have no clue what they are talking about, but they are also in direct doctrinal contradiction against their god, the Pope.

Pius X's predecessor, Pope Leo XIII (8th, Vincenzo Pecci, 1878-1903), also decreed that the Pope was like unto God Himself:

"But the supreme teacher in the Church is the Roman Pontiff. Union of minds, therefore, requires, together with a perfect accord in the one faith, complete submission and obedience of will to the Church and to the Roman Pontiff, as to God Himself."

-Pope Leo XIII, *Sapientiae Christianae*, 1890, retrieved May 1, 2018, [papalencyclicals.net/Leo13/113sapie.htm]



The popes of the Catholic Church believe they are God Himself, and they also expect everyone else to see them as God because they are lifted up in the pride of their hearts, just as Satan is lifted up in the pride of his heart:

How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.

-Isaiah 14:12-15

Even Pope John Paul II understood that giving the Pope such divine titles as "Holy Father" seems contrary to the doctrines of Christ, but he told Catholics to do it anyway:



*"Have no fear when people call me the 'Vicar of Christ,' when they say to me 'Holy Father,' or 'Your Holiness,' or use titles similar to these, which seem even inimical [adverse/opposite] to the Gospel. Christ himself declared: 'Call no one on earth your father; you have but one Father in heaven. Do not be called 'Master'; you have but one master, the Messiah' (Mt 23:9-10). These expressions, nevertheless, have evolved out of a long tradition, becoming part of common usage. One must not be afraid of these words either."*

-Pope John Paul II, *Crossing the Threshold of Hope*, Knopf Doubleday Publishing Group, 1995, p. 6, ISBN: 9780679765615

To his very small credit, John Paul II was correct in that it seems contradictory to call a priest or pope "Holy Father." The reason this seems contradictory is because it *IS* contradictory because Jesus stated very clearly that to give a man the title of "father" in the religious sense (not in a blood lineage sense, from son to father) is a violation of Christ's commandment:

*But be not ye called Rabbi [the title of a religious lord or master]: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ. But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.*

-Matthew 23:8-9

So we see another example in which the Catholic Church is telling people to *IGNORE* Jesus Christ, to *IGNORE* the Bible, and to instead follow the traditions set forth by the Catholic Church. Once again, Jesus pointed out the hypocrites who followed religious traditions rather than Biblical truth, rightly asserting that all their worship and tradition is useless:

*But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*

-Matthew 15:9

*Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy [way of thinking] and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments [first teachings] of the world, and not after Christ.*

-Colossians 2:8

*And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?*

-Luke 6:46

Unless Catholics are humbled to repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing), specifically concerning their idolatry, they will not be able to understand Scripture. They will never have a true fear of the Lord that is good for their souls, and will instead fear the popes and priests of the world's largest religious scam:

*The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction.*

-Proverbs 1:7

*For that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the LORD:*

-Proverbs 1:29

*So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.*

-Hebrews 13:6

The Word of God has told us that the popes are fools who despise wisdom and instruction in the truth, and thus, Catholics are equally as foolish, if not more, because they are highly esteeming these fools. The lofty things of this world, like the Catholic popes, which are highly respected among men are hated in the sight of God:

*And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God.*

-Luke 16:15

*The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?*

*-Jeremiah 17:9*

*He that trusteth in his own heart is a fool: but whoso walketh wisely, he shall be delivered.*

*-Proverbs 28:26*

John Paul II also wrote:

*"[W]e readily understand the devotion of Saint Francis of Assisi for 'the Lord Pope', the daughterly outspokenness of Saint Catherine of Siena towards the one whom she called 'sweet Christ on earth'."*

*-Pope John Paul II, Vita Consecrata, Vatican Archives, Mar 25, 1996, retrieved May 1, 2018, [https://bit.ly/1Ql5nTO]*

I have watched various video interviews with Catholic parishioners, priests, and nuns, who all call their Pope "*The Good Shepherd*," which is a title reserved for Christ alone since there is none good but God. ([Mark 10:18](#)) They also said that being with him is like standing in the presence of God, which is not only laughable from a Scriptural standpoint (i.e. no man could stand in a fraction of the presence of God and live), but it is absurd to think that man could arise to such a divine state by being voted into office by men.

Again, the power over heaven and earth belongs to Jesus Christ alone, and it is heresy to believe or teach that any man should usurp His throne in any capacity:

*And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.*

*-Matthew 28:18*

*I am the LORD: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images.*

*-Isaiah 42:8*

However, the popes of Rome have assumed the power and glory of God unto themselves, and declared that there are other methods to salvation apart from the Lord Jesus Christ, as Pope John Paul II wrote:

*"I recently wrote to the bishops of Asia: 'Although the [Catholic] Church gladly acknowledges whatever is true and holy in the religious traditions of Buddhism, Hinduism and Islam as a reflection of that truth which enlightens all people, this does not lessen her [the Catholic Church's] duty and resolve to proclaim without fail Jesus Christ who is 'the way, and the truth and the life.'... The fact that the followers of other religions can receive God's grace and be saved by Christ apart from the ordinary means which he [Jesus] has established does not thereby cancel the call to faith and baptism which God wills for all people."*

*-Pope John Paul II, Redemptoris Missio, Vatican Archives, Dec 7, 1990, retrieved May 1, 2018, [https://bit.ly/1QXMWUO]*

In case it was unclear what John Paul II said, he taught that people of other religions, who contradict Christ in their doctrine and practices, can receive God's saving grace by another method apart from the method Jesus Christ established for us. How does one receive the grace of salvation apart from the method that God declared? God has told us of no other method in His Word, and so in order to believe what the Catholic Church teaches, Catholics are forced to put all their faith and hope into a fallible pope, and they do so to their own destruction.

*Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.*

*-Jeremiah 17:5*

Thus, if you are a Catholic, you must believe that all people in other religions are saved by their own means, no matter what pagan god they worship because, according to Catholic decree, to question and argue against the Pope would be the equivalent of questioning and arguing against Christ Himself. It does not matter if the Pope says that people are "*called to faith in Christ*," because as soon as he teaches that there are other methods to salvation, "*the way, truth, and life*" of Christ is made void.

*Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.*

*-John 14:6*

As we read earlier, the wicked popes of Rome literally believe they are Jesus Christ in the flesh, which means that the logical conclusion of their religious teaching is that all who do not come to the Catholic Pope to pay homage (i.e. to give reference to the Supreme Being) will end up in hell because they will be anathemized. Those readers who have been paying close attention may already see a major contradiction with this, as John Paul II continues to say:

*"The universality of salvation means that it is granted not only to those who explicitly believe in Christ and have entered the [Catholic] Church."*

-Pope John Paul II, *Redemptoris Missio*, Vatican Archives, Dec 7, 1990, retrieved May 1, 2018, [https://bit.ly/1QXMWUO]

Even though Christ just told us that no one can come unto the Father except through Him, the Pope says there are other ways apart from Christ, but the Catholic Church still requires people bow to the Pope (who they believe to be Christ) in order to be saved because John Paul II also contradicts Boniface VIII, who we read earlier when he said that "it is absolutely necessary for salvation that every human creature be subject to the Roman Pontiff." In other words, the reason they say that all people must come to the Catholic Church to be saved, while also saying that other religions can save people, is because they believe their Catholic Pope is God, and therefore, if you simply pay homage to the Catholic Pope (even while believing in another religion), they believe you are saved. The reason there is so much contradiction between the popes, and the reason there is so much confusion and opposition against the Word of God, is because Catholic leadership has nothing to do with the Holy Spirit, and everything to do with idolatry.

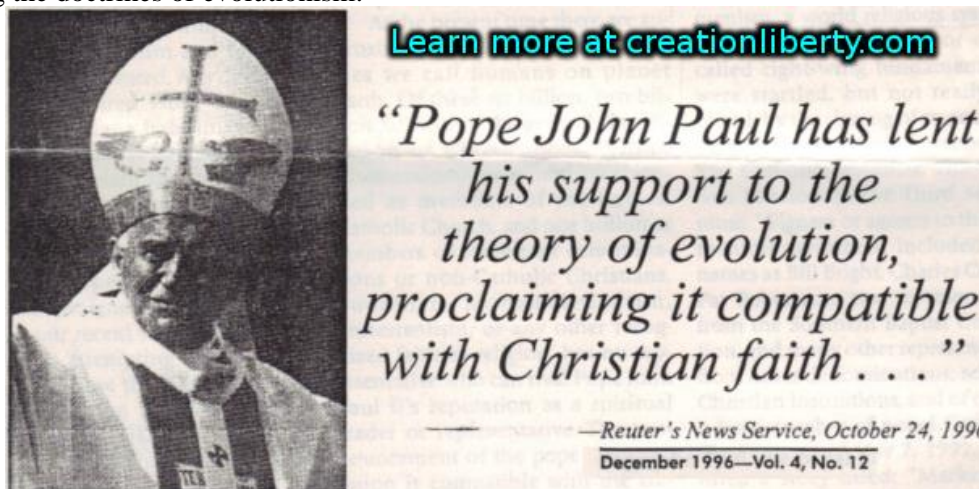
Just as politicians, Catholic authorities often contradict themselves and flip-flop on their positions based on who they are talking to, and who they want to convince of a particular idea, so that they may gain more power and wealth, and in the next chapter, we will learn what happens when the Catholic Church attains the supreme power they so fervently desire. The goal of Rome was to conquer the world, and so the spirit of Rome lives on within the Roman Pontiffs, who now seek a one-world religion under the Pope's authority, in which they are willing to accept any religious belief, so long as they accept the Catholic Pope as a revered religious authority over the world.

For example, in Pope John Paul II's book, *Crossing the Threshold of Hope*, he makes many statements which indicate that almost any religious belief will lead to heaven:

- The Catholic Church accepts truth and holiness from all false religions. (p. 46)
- Hinduism is another means of taking refuge in God. (p. 46)
- Buddhism is a religion of Salvation. (p. 48)
- Islam worships the One True God. (p. 52)
- The Holy Spirit is present in every religion. (p. 47)

(See Pope John Paul II, *Crossing the Threshold of Hope*, Knopf Doubleday Publishing Group, 1995, ISBN: 9780679765615)

Knowing these things, it should be no surprise to learn that the Catholic Church supports almost all false religious ideology, including the doctrines of evolutionism:



(Read "[Evolutionism: Another New-Age Religion](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

John Paul II rejected God's account of Genesis and lended ideological credibility to heretics:

*"The Church's magisterium is directly concerned with the question of evolution, for it involves the conception of man."*

-Pope John Paul II, Address to the Pontifical Academy of Sciences, Oct 22, 1996, retrieved May 8, 2018, [catholicculture.org/culture/library/view.cfm?id=80]

The Lord God, though His prophet Moses, stated clearly in Exodus 20 that the creation week was a typical seven-day work week, just as we experience today, and the Lord Jesus Christ also said if you do not believe what Moses wrote, then you do not believe Christ either:

*Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.*  
-Exodus 20:9-11

*For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?*  
-John 5:47

(Read "[The Earth's Age Affects Salvation Doctrine](#)" here at [creationliberty.com](#) for more details.)

Not only does the Catholic Church not care at all about what God has said on this matter, but other heathens use the Catholic Church as an excuse to rally more people to the evolutionary religion. For example, the National Center for Science Education, an American organization solely devoted to the promotion of evolutionism said:

*"The Catholic Church certainly does not endorse creationism. This is clearly attested by reference to the concluding statement of the historic conference of paleontologists, geneticists, and molecular biologists which met from May 24th to May 27th, 1982, at the Pontifical Academy of Sciences in the Vatican Gardens. After working together under the direction of Carlos Chagas, Brazilian neurophysiologist and scientific advisor to Pope John Paul II, the group concluded that: 'We freely acknowledge that there is room for differences of opinion on such problems as species formation and the mechanisms of evolutionary change. Nevertheless, we are convinced that masses of evidence render the application of the concept of evolution to man and other primates beyond serious dispute.'"*

-Nation Center for Science Education, "Letters to the Editor," Vol. 4, No. 4, 1984, p. 44-49, retrieved May 8, 2018, [<http://ncse.com/cej/4/4/letters-to-editor>]

In short, the Catholic Pope's science advisor stated that although there is some room for debate in the Catholic Church about how evolution took place, there is *NO* room for debate about whether or not evolution took place because the Catholic Church believes in evolutionism. More recently, Pope Francis made the following statement to the Pontifical Academy of Sciences in support of evolutionism's many heresies:

*"When we read about creation in Genesis, we run the risk of imagining God was a magician, with a magic wand able to do everything. But that is not so... He created human beings and let them develop according to the internal laws that he gave to each one so they would reach their fulfillment."*

-Pope Francis, quoted by Ishaan Tharoor, "Pope Francis Says Evolution is Real and God is No Wizard," *The Washington Post*, Oct 28, 2014, retrieved May 23, 2015, [[washingtonpost.com/blogs/worldviews/wp/2014/10/28/pope-francis-backs-theory-of-evolution-says-god-is-no-wizard](http://washingtonpost.com/blogs/worldviews/wp/2014/10/28/pope-francis-backs-theory-of-evolution-says-god-is-no-wizard/)]

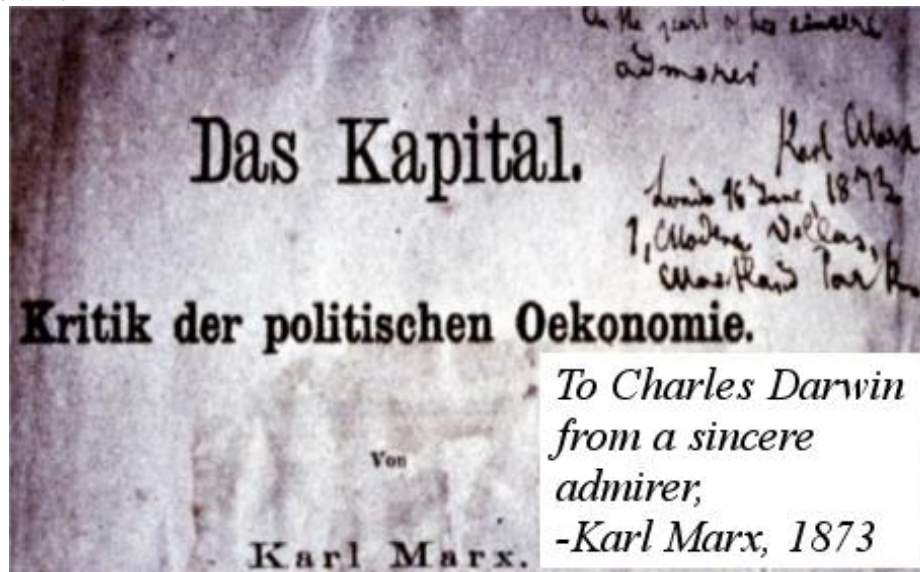
There are two major problems with this, the first being that Pope Francis does not believe God is all-powerful, and the second problem is that Pope Francis is claiming that anyone who believes that God is all-powerful, and that God did the things He said He did in His Word, are fools that believe in a magician's witchcraft. This is a very dark, twisted heresy, and so it should be no surprise for readers to learn that Pope Francis also promotes Karl Marx's communism:

**"REPORTER:** *"You told me some time ago that the precept, 'Love your neighbour as thyself' had to change, given the dark times that we are going through, and become 'more than thyself.' So you yearn for a society where equality dominates. This, as you know, is the programme of Marxist socialism and then of communism. Are you therefore thinking of a Marxist type of society?"*

**POPE FRANCIS:** *It has been said many times and my response has always been that, if anything, it is the communists who think like Christians. Christ spoke of a society where the poor, the weak and the marginalized have the right to decide. Not demagogues, not Barabbas, but the people, the poor, whether they have faith in a transcendent God or not. It is they who must help to achieve equality and freedom."*

-Eugenio Scalfari, "Pope Francis: 'Trump? I do not judge. I care only if he makes the poor suffer'," *la Repubblica*, Nov 13, 2016, retrieved Dec 12, 2020, [[repubblica.it/vaticano/2016/11/11/news/pope\\_francis\\_trump-151810120](http://repubblica.it/vaticano/2016/11/11/news/pope_francis_trump-151810120)]; These comments were made after Donald Trump's election into office, and were part of the leftist media's socialist agenda.

It should be noted that Karl Marx dedicated his communist book, *Das Kapital*, to Charles Darwin because Marx was a sincere admirer of Darwin:



It is clear that neither the reporter nor Francis understood what it means to "love thy neighbor as thyself;" and I say that because I believe they know full-well what Marxism, socialism, and communism are, but they twist the words of Jesus Christ to promote their own foolish and insane ideology.

*As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.*  
-2 Peter 3:16

As we just read, Pope Francis believes that communism, the system of government that has stripped the liberties of citizens, sent them into poverty, and has killed countless people under vicious regimes, is what Christ taught us.

*Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.*  
-2 Corinthians 3:17

Such wicked men twist and distort what Jesus said:

*Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.*  
-John 15:13

However, contextually, that does not mean that a man should take food out of the mouth of this children to provide for a lazy man who will not work:

*But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.*  
-1 Timothy 5:8

*For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.*  
-2 Thessalonians 3:10



Others may argue that Jesus told a rich man to give all that he had to the poor:

*And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good, save one, that is, God. Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother. And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up. Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich.*

-Luke 18:18-23

The hypocrisy of communists and the Catholic Church is that they always want *OTHER* rich people to give up all they have for the poor, and yet, they sit in palaces while the poor grind the flour to make their bread. Neither communists nor the Catholic popes (who promote communism) are willing to give up their lofty stations and pleasures for the sake of the poor and needy, and it should be noted that neither popes nor communist leaders have ever followed the Lord Jesus Christ, which was Jesus told the rich man he ought to do.

The Catholic Church and its heretical leadership are those who promise their laity liberty, but they are the servants of corruption because they sit in palaces while the people grind the flour to make their bread. In other words, the true heart of Pope Francis could care less about the poor and the needy, so long as they bow to his authority.

*As free, and not using your liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as the servants of God.*

-1 Peter 2:16

*While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.*

-2 Peter 2:19

These popes do not believe what Moses wrote, and that is because they do not believe on the Lord Jesus Christ. Again, they claim to serve Jesus Christ with their mouths, but their hearts are far from him.

*This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me.*

-Matthew 15:8

The Catholic Church's ecumenical push towards a one-world religion is the purpose for them accepting all religions, including evolutionism (which is a religion) into one unified corporation, lying to everyone by telling them that they will all go to heaven. This forced ecumenical movement cannot exist in a society of liberty, which is why Catholicism needs communism. It is also for this reason that Pope Francis declared that proselytizing/evangelism (i.e. preaching of the Gospel to win souls - [Pro 11:30](#)) was too controversial, and that evangelism does not grow the Kingdom of God:

*"The [Catholic] Church, the Kingdom of God, does not grow by proselytizing."*

-Pope Francis, "The treasure that God has given us," *L'Osservatore Romano*, Vatican City, No. 49, Dec 8, 2017, retrieved May 8, 2018, [osservatoreromano.va/vaticanresources/pdf/ING\_2017\_049\_0812.pdf]



proselyte (n): new convert to some religion; thus a Gentile converted to Judaism is a proselyte; a pagan converted to christianity is a proselyte  
evangelism (n): the public declaration of the gospel

(See 'proselyte' & 'evangelism', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved May 8, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

Thus, what Francis is claiming is that men have no need to be converted:

*Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;*  
-Acts 3:19

A few weeks later, Francis attempted to redefine evangelism when asked, "During this journey you spoke of dialogue for peacebuilding. But what is your priority: evangelization or a dialogue for peace?"

"[E]vangelism is not proselytizing. The [Catholic] Church grows not through proselytizing but through attraction... one young man asked me this question: 'What should I say to a university classmate, a friend, a good person, but who is atheist? What should I tell him in order to change him, to convert him?' This was the response: 'The last thing you should do is to say something.'"

-Pope Francis, "One the return flight from Dhaka," *L'Osservatore Romano*, Vatican City, No. 51-52, Dec 22-29, 2017, retrieved May 8, 2018, [osservatoreromano.va/vaticanresources/pdf/ING\_2017\_049\_0812.pdf]

I have to agree with Pope Francis to a degree because of his belief that the Catholic Church is grown through attraction rather than evangelizing. The true church of Jesus Christ is not grown through attraction, but the Catholic Church most certainly is because they bring people into their corrupt fold through worldly methods that contradict what Christ taught us.

*Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.*  
-1 John 2:15

It is no wonder that so many church buildings in the U.S. yoke together with the Catholic Church nowadays because they do the same things. What churchgoers and their leaders choose to do in their church buildings is (more often than not) based on traditions of men rather than the truth of God's Word, and so they try to use the methods of worldly lusts to attract more members, which makes modern-day church buildings nothing more than a country club.

(Read "[Christian Music: For The Love of Money](#)" & "[Revivalism: The Devil's Design](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Francis's statement also contradicts Christ's most basic commandments, and it goes against the entire example that was set for us in the New Testament, which I have already quoted in this chapter, but I will quote it again:

*Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.*  
-Matthew 28:19-20

preach (v): to pronounce a public discourse on a religious subject, or from a subject, or from a text of Scripture; to discourse on the gospel way of salvation and exhort to repentance

(See 'preach', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved May 8, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

*Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.*  
-2 Timothy 4:2

Christ never told us that preaching the word, rebuking sinners, and exhorting people to humble themselves to godly sorrow of their wrongdoing (i.e. repentance) would be popular with the people. Rather, He told us that we would be hated by men for preaching such things:

*Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.*  
-Luke 6:23

Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

-2 Timothy 3:12

As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised; only lest they should suffer persecution for the cross of Christ.

-Galatians 6:12

Most Catholics I have encountered refuse to hear most of the things I have documented in this chapter alone, and they will not listen to my preachings that their beloved popes have spoken so much antichrist doctrine against the Word of God, but once we understand how little the Catholic Church cares about the Word of God, it only makes sense why they make such blasphemous and heretical statements. Let's read this quote one more time from the Catholic Catechism:

"As a result the Church, to whom the transmission and interpretation of Revelation is entrusted, *does not derive her certainty about all revealed truths from the holy Scriptures alone. Both Scripture and Tradition must be accepted and honored with equal sentiments of devotion and reverence.*"

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "The Transmission of Divine Revelation," Part 1, Section 1, Chapter 2, Article 2, Canon #82, retrieved Apr 27, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc\_css/archive/catechism/p1s1c2a2.htm]

What readers need to understand is that I declare that Catholic priests are heretics, and in return, they call me a heretic, but what is the difference between us? My accusation of heresy against them is based on the Word of the Living God, whereas their accusation of heresy against me is based on their traditions created by their corrupt popes, so in short, they accuse me of being a heretic against their traditions (of which, I say, "*praise God*"), but I accuse them of being heretics against the Holy Scriptures (of which, they are guilty), and therefore, Catholics need to decide if they are going to follow Scripture or tradition because you cannot serve both.

And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: *but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.*

-Joshua 24:15

The following is from the 1917 edition of the Catholic Code of Canon Law, which tells us that if you **repent (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing)** and believe on the Lord Jesus Christ for your salvation, while you deny Catholic tradition at the same time, then they claim you are a heretic, apostate, and schismatic (meaning you are a "divider" against their ecumenical tradition):

"A baptized Christian, who *calls himself a Christian, yet obstinately [stubbornly] denies or calls into doubt any of the truths [i.e. traditions] to be believed by Divine and Catholic faith, is a heretic; if he abandons the Christian faith altogether he is called an apostate; if, finally, he refuses to be subject to the Supreme Pontiff [i.e. The Pope], or to have communication with the members of the Church subject to the Roman Pontiff, he is a schismatic.*"

-Stanislaus Woywod (Catholic Priest), *The New Canon Law: A Commentary and Summary of the New Code of Canon Law*, J.F. Wagner, 1918, p. 272, [University of Toronto]

It is Jesus Christ who first came to bring division; to separate the truth from the lies:

Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division:

-Luke 12:51

(Read "*The Biblical Understanding of Sanctification*" here at [creationliberty.com](http://creationliberty.com) for more details.)

By the way, it should be noted that we who are born again in Christ do not refuse communication (i.e. in the context of conversation) with Catholics. We Christians are commissioned to do good to Catholics, even those who believe us to be their enemies, but we refuse **COMMUNION** with Catholics, which means we refuse to be yoked together with them, we refuse the cup devils that they drink, and we refuse our intimate fellowship with them because we care more about their eternal souls than how they feel about us.

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?

-2 Corinthians 6:14

Of course, the wording the Catholic Church used was updated in 1983 in order to match the ecumenical movement (because otherwise, they would alienate all the other false religions they now pander towards), which is no surprise because the Catholic Church has always altered their official doctrines to match the political movements of the day. What may surprise Catholics to learn is that the Catholic Church believes that reading the Bible will cause men to denounce Jesus Christ, as this Catholic missionary states:

*"The Reformation produced indeed an exaggerated individualism, which by declaring every man equally competent to find out the doctrines of the Saviour from his own private reading of the Scriptures, has led millions to the utter denial of Christ and His doctrines of faith and morality."*

-Bertrand L. Conway (Catholic Priest), *The Question-box Answers: Replies to Questions Received on Missions to Non-Catholics*, The Catholic Book Exchange, 1903, p. 131, [New York Public Library]

I would encourage readers to look over that statement carefully because the priest just stated that if you read the doctrines of Christ yourself, the Bible will lead you to deny Jesus Christ. That is absurd. That makes no sense at all. Rather, the problem is that the Catholic Church believes that their wicked popes are Jesus Christ Himself; therefore, they believe that if you read Scripture for yourself, you will deny their false christ, the Pope, and to that I say, amen, because your faith in the truth of Jesus Christ is established by study of His Word.

*So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.*  
-Romans 10:17

*Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.*  
-2 Timothy 2:15

*Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation.*  
-2 Peter 1:20

*But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.*  
-1 Corinthians 2:10

The Catholic Church does *NOT* believe these verses of Scripture. They might tell you that they believe them on the surface, but in their hearts, they do not believe these verses. They do *NOT* believe that the Holy Spirit reveals truth unto individual Christians because they believe you have to go through the private interpretations of the Catholic Church.

*These things have I written unto you concerning them that seduce you. But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.*  
-1 John 2:26-27

A preacher like myself is a useful tool that Christians can use, meaning that these teachings can be an assistance to your understanding of God's Word, but I am not necessary for the education of my brethren in Christ because they learn from the Spirit of the Living God. Catholics do not understand this because they do not have God's Spirit living within them, and so they believe what I am teaching here is foolish.

*But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.*  
-1 Corinthians 2:14

That is why the Catholic priests make statements like these:

*"Deny the [Catholic] Church's infallible witness [i.e. The Pope, who they believe is infallible], and lo! the Bible is reduced to the level of mere Oriental literature, full of errors and utterly devoid of divine inspiration... so that St. Augustine could rightly say in the fifth century: 'I would not believe the gospel unless moved thereto by the authority of the [Catholic] Church.' ... There is nowhere in the New Testament a clear, methodical statement of the teachings of Christ."*

-Bertrand L. Conway (Catholic Priest), *The Question-box Answers: Replies to Questions Received on Missions to Non-Catholics*, The Catholic Book Exchange, 1903, p. 66, [New York Public Library]

If you look up the reference and read this priest's statements for yourself, he continues on the next page to say that the Bible is *NOT* a safe book to read. The Catholic Church wants Catholics to stay away from the Bible because the truth in the Word of God will lead Catholics to Christ, and coming to Christ will lead them *AWAY* from Rome and her Pontiff.

Certainly, there are many cultists who have drawn misinterpretations from Scripture and started corrupt religious entities by doing so. In fact, the Catholic Church is one example of that. However, I agree that there is not a color-coded, bullet-point style of organization to Scripture, and what Catholics do not understand is that God structured His Word like that on purpose.

*Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. But the word of the LORD was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken.*

-Isaiah 28:9-13

(Read "[Charismatic Gibberish vs Speaking in Tongues](#)" here at [creationliberty.com](#) for more details.)

The phrase "*precept upon precept*" means that commandments of Scripture should be taken in correlation with one another, the phrase "*line upon line*" means that Scripture should be read in its context, and the phrase "*here a little, and there a little*" means that the fullness of a doctrine is not often all in one convenient location, meaning that we must read through many verses in different books of the Bible to understand the fullness of a doctrine. The reason God setup His Word to be studied in this way is so that men who have not had their understanding unlocked by the Holy Spirit would be blinded and come up with false doctrines, whereby we who are born again in Christ and have had our understanding opened by the Holy Spirit would be able to see the false teachers and beware.

*For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.*

-Hebrews 5:12-14

This is why God preserved His Word, to protect the poor and needy from those who would abuse them:

*Help, LORD; for the godly man ceaseth; for the faithful fail from among the children of men. They speak vanity every one with his neighbour: with flattering lips and with a double heart do they speak.*

*The LORD shall cut off all flattering lips, and the tongue that speaketh proud things: Who have said, With our tongue will we prevail; our lips are our own: who is lord over us? For the oppression of the poor, for the sighing of the needy, now will I arise, saith the LORD; I will set him in safety from him that puffeth at him. The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O LORD, thou shalt preserve them from this generation*

*for ever.*

-Psalm 12:1-7

Karl Keating, founder of *Catholic Answers Magazine*, took part in a live debate in which he never quoted Scripture, while his opponent quoted it often. During the discussion Keating attempted to defend the inspiration of Scripture, and during Q&A, a young man stood up and asked Keating why he was not quoting from the Bible during the debate, and he responded:

*"You know, people have different ways of speaking... I don't believe in giving chapter and verse because, first, it's a waste of time... and second, I didn't bring my Bible because I don't like to flip through pages and read from it out to the audience when I try to read from my notes."*

-Karl Keating, "Catholic Debate Peter Ruckman Karl Keating Full Video," uploaded by stereomann83, retrieved Dec 12, 2020, [https://youtu.be/W2HrCTGjGAo?t=7700]

In summary, Keating is saying that his personal notes are more important than the Word of God, which means Keating actually worships himself, and in reality, he is more afraid that quoting the Word of God alongside his comments would reveal his ignorance of Scripture if someone were to look up the context of the passages he is referencing. Again, this should be no surprise after we have learned that the Catholic Church holds the traditions of men in higher authority than the Bible, and how Catholic priests do not lay a foundation in study of Scripture (as we learned in the introduction to this book), and in chapter nine, we will also learn that nuns also do not end up studying Scripture either.

The following Catholic priest (in a Catholic-approved publication) says:

*"Historically, we are certain that the Bible has never been the way to find out Christ... it has ever been practically impossible for men, generally, to find out Christ from the Bible only."*

-Bertrand L. Conway (Catholic Priest), *The Question-box Answers: Replies to Questions Received on Missions to Non-Catholics*, The Catholic Book Exchange, 1903, p. 70, [New York Public Library]

The Lord God has *NEVER* told us that tradition is a lamp unto our feet, and that priests are a light unto our path.

*How sweet are thy words unto my taste! yea, sweeter than honey to my mouth! Through thy precepts I get understanding: therefore I hate every false way. Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.*

*-Psalm 119:103-105*

The Lord God has *NEVER* told us that tradition is sharper than any sword, and that priests are the discerners of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

*For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.*

*-Hebrews 4:12*

The Lord Jesus Christ *NEVER* told us that if we continue blindly following the traditions of priests, that we would be disciples of Christ.

*Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*

*-John 8:31-32*

If you want to be approved by God, then you need to study His Word, otherwise, you have reason to be ashamed. If you simply follow the vain instructions of a priest, having no knowledge of God's Word, then you will only increase in ungodliness.

*Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord that they strive not about words to no profit, but to the subverting of the hearers. [i.e. to tear down the foundations of worldly*

*philosophies] Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. But shun profane and vain babblings: for they will increase unto more ungodliness.*

*-2 Timothy 2:14-16*

Despite the fact that God has clearly pointed mankind to look to His Word, the Catholic popes throughout the past 1700 years have pointed mankind to themselves, to their antichrist throne, transgressing against the Word of God through their traditions, and making God's Word void to the hearers because of their countless hypocrisies.

*Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.*

-Mark 7:13

*But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?*

-Matthew 15:3

This Catholic message of abandoning the Word of God for the words of the popes has been key in conditioning Catholics (who, statistically, make up around ¼ of the world's current population) to join in the ecumenical agenda. On Oct 27, 1986, in Assisi, Italy, John Paul II invited the leaders of many false religions from all over the world, from Buddhists to Native American witchdoctors, to pray for "peace."

## Pope John Paul II – World's Religious Leaders Together

[https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9\\_9J1m9xkV4](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9_9J1m9xkV4)

*"Pope [John Paul II] is currently leading the greatest ecumenical movement in history, in order to unite all religions under Rome's leadership. In 1986, Pope John Paul II gathered in Assisi, Italy the leaders of the world's major religions to pray for peace. There were snake worshipers, fire worshipers, spiritists, animists, Buddhists, Muslims, Hindus, North American witchdoctors; I watched in astonishment as they walked to the microphone to pray. The pope said they were all praying to the same god, and that their prayers were creating a spiritual energy that was bringing about a new climate for peace. John Paul II allowed his good friend, the Dalai Lama, to put the Buddha on the altar in St. Peter's Church in Assisi, and with his monks, to have a Buddhist worship ceremony there while Shintoists chanted and rang their bells outside. The prophesied world religion is in the process of being formed before our eyes, and the Vatican is the headquarters of the movement."*

All famous Catholic icons have believed and taught these same ecumenical (i.e. one-world) religious principles, and all of them have been guilty of idolatry without any repentance of their sins. For example, very few people today know that Mother Teresa prayed at pagan altars and bowed before Buddhist statues as she traveled around the world.



(Read "Wolves in Costume: Mother Teresa" here at [creationliberty.com](http://creationliberty.com) for more details.)

*For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.*

-1 Thessalonians 5:3

There is a unity in the Spirit of God, as Scripture teaches us, but the Spirit of the Holy God is not with the Catholic Church; their "world peace" is a false peace that will bring destruction. We have already seen quotations from the Catholic popes in which they claim to be "God on earth," and therefore, the ecumenical movement is about bringing all people under the Catholic Pope's leadership, so they will worship him as a god.

This worshipping popes as gods is nothing new, and it can easily be seen by how the people act when a pope comes to town. According to the following news article, Catholic worshipers are willing to poop their pants just to see their Catholic god, and I assure readers that this is not a joke or satire; this is real:



*"When Pope Francis visits the Philippines next week, traffic enforcers won't let the capital's streets get gridlocked if they have to answer the call of nature. About 2,000 traffic enforcers who will be on duty during the 15-19 January papal visit will be required to wear adult diapers, the Metropolitan Manila Development Authority chairman, Francis Tolentino, said. Tolentino also encouraged people who will wait for hours to see the pope to also wear diapers. The prospect of wearing diapers while on duty was 'well received' by his men, he said on Wednesday."*

-Associated Press in Manila, "Philippine Traffic Officers To Wear Adult Diapers During Papal Visit," *The Guardian*, Jan 7, 2015, retrieved May 8, 2018, [theguardian.com/world/2015/jan/07/philippines-pope-francis]

Please understand that diapers on babies are only to keep feces contained for a short time until the diaper can be changed because, if left unchanged, it can cause rashes and/or septic infections that can be dangerous. Even during this event in which thousands of adults would be walking around in their own filth, idolatry was at the forefront of the celebration: *"The Black Nazarene procession [Mexican worship of a statue depicting a black-skinned 'Jesus'] attracts hundreds of thousands of barefoot, mostly male, Filipino Roman Catholics, who parade a centuries-old black statue of Jesus Christ which devotees believe possess mystical powers that could cure ailments and answer wishes of good health and fortune. [i.e. idolatry] Tolentino says there won't be enough portable toilets for the millions of people expected to see Pope Francis hold an open-air mass at the seaside Rizal Park on 18 January. 'If you attend an event that will last for 24 hours, you cannot go around looking for a [portable toilet],' Tolentino said. Priests, nuns, seminarians, and the elderly also should consider wearing diapers, he said. Asked if he will also wear one, Tolentino said, 'I will try, but in my case, I have less hydration.'"*

-Associated Press in Manila, "Philippine Traffic Officers To Wear Adult Diapers During Papal Visit," *The Guardian*, Jan 7, 2015, retrieved May 8, 2018, [theguardian.com/world/2015/jan/07/philippines-pope-francis]

Of course, the chairman of the Metropolitan Manila Development Authority would not subject himself to that which he recommends to everyone else. It should be noted that he never suggested that the pope should wear a diaper too.

I find it amazing how many times I have heard Catholics tell me that they are not idolaters, and yet, the Catholic Church holds national and international celebrations to worship a statue, and even when the Catholic Pope shows up, he encourages them to continue in idolatry, and never once rebukes it. These idolaters line the streets in their sin, hoping to get a special, worthless indulgence from their Catholic god, and are so desperate to touch the hem of his garment, they will inconveniently defecate in their own trousers just to breath the same air as such a wicked man.

*And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient;*

*-Romans 1:28*



The reason the Catholic popes do not rebuke idolatry is because they want all to bow to the Catholic throne of antichrist. You will not find any Biblical justification for anyone who claims to be of Christ to worship in an Islamic mosque, tell the Muslims they are worshipping the same 'god', and kiss the corrupt Qur'an for the media, but the antichrist popes have certainly done these things because they do not know Jesus Christ, and they do not care to know Him.

(Read "[Islam: Religion of Terror](http://www.creationliberty.com)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)



I have received letters from angry Catholics telling me how I am just a worthless layman who has no special education or worldly honors, so I have no right to even question their so-called "holy" Roman Pontiff. In response, I tell them that the next time Jorge (i.e. Pope Francis) is in my area, have him stop by and I will be more than happy to set him straight on the doctrines of Christ because the Lord Jesus Christ has already instructed us that such vile men of high and lofty stature, with grand, self-serving titles, are not chosen by God to preach His Word, but rather, the Holy God has chosen the lowly and base to preach His Word, so that no flesh should glory in His presence:

*For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; And base* [worthless] *things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: That no flesh should glory in his presence.*

-1 Corinthians 1:26-29

The eyes of the popes become dull through the incense they keep burning before their idols, and thus, they believe that Christ failed in His sacrifice on the cross, as Francis stated in 2015:

*"The cross shows us a different way of measuring success. Ours is to plant the seeds. God sees to the fruits of our labors. And if at times our efforts and works seem to fail and not produce fruit, we need to remember that we are followers of Jesus Christ and his life, humanly speaking, ended in failure, the failure of the cross."*

-Pope Francis, quoted by Emily Shapiro, "Read What Pope Francis Said at New York's St. Patrick's Cathedral," *ABC News*, Sept 24, 2015, retrieved May 8, 2018, [abcnews.go.com/US/read-pope-francis-yorks-st-patricks-cathedral/story?id=34023376]

Christ never failed. He fulfilled everything that was foretold of Him thousands of years before His arrival. He did everything He said He would do. The Bible tells us that Christ's sacrifice on the cross brought us victory, not failure.

*But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.*

-1 Corinthians 15:57

In the next paragraph, Francis continued to say:

*"Another danger -- another danger emerges when we become jealous of our free time, when we think that surrounding ourselves with worldly comforts help us to serve better. The problem with this way of reasoning is that it can blunt the power of god's daily call to conversion, to encounter with him."*

-Pope Francis, quoted by Emily Shapiro, "Read What Pope Francis Said at New York's St. Patrick's Cathedral," *ABC News*, Sept 24, 2015, retrieved May 8, 2018, [abcnews.go.com/US/read-pope-francis-yorks-st-patricks-cathedral/story?id=34023376]

When I read Francis's words, my first thought was: "*Is he joking?*" Is the world so blind that they cannot see the overwhelming elephant of hypocrisy sitting in the corner of the room?

The following image is the inside of St. Peter's Basilica, which houses the papal enclave in Vatican City. The entire structure is substantially larger than the Capitol Building on Capitol Hill in Washington DC, and is lined with silver and gold. Please look at it closely and ask yourself if it is possible that the Catholic Church might be guilty of "surrounding themselves with worldly comforts to help them serve better."



There has never lived a Catholic Pope who has not surrounded himself with lavish comforts, while hypocritically preaching to the public about charity, tithing, and living meekly. The next image is John Paul II's private bed for his private bed chambers in his private jet, and it is considered a "relic" that sits in a museum in Kansas:



*And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.*

*-Matthew 8:20*

*Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. Carry neither purse, nor scrip [cash money], nor shoes: and salute no man by the way.*

*-Luke 10:3-4*

*And many shall follow their pernicious [destructive] ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not.*

*-2 Peter 2:2-3*

I could go on for many hours just describing the tiniest fraction of Catholic wealth and lavish comfort that surrounds their priests and bishops. What inconceivable hypocrisy for any Catholic pope to tell everyone else that they need to humble themselves, while they glory in that for which they should be ashamed.

*For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.*

*-Philippians 3:18-19*

Since he was made Pope of Rome, Pope Francis has put on a facade of alleged "humility," and the media has swallowed it whole. Media outlets swooned over Pope Francis staying in a "normal" hotel room instead of a royal suite, and how he personally came down to the front desk to pay his bill, and so what the media and the Catholic Church believes we should do is bow down and give homage to a wicked man for doing ordinary things that the rest of us do on a daily basis!

(See Nicole Winfield, "Pope pays hotel bill: Pope Francis sheds luxuries of previous popes," *Christian Science Monitor*, Mar 14, 2013, retrieved Dec 19, 2020, [http://bit.ly/2J46Mp0])

I am waiting for the news headline one day to read, "Pope Wipes Own Rear End, No Longer Needs Fellows From The Royal College of Surgeons For Assistance" because that is the level of absurdity we are witnessing. However, we need to remember that the Catholic Church believes that their Pope is Christ on earth, and so therefore, they consider him to be divine, and thus, his doing something so unbelievably simple, which everyone else does on a daily basis, like paying a hotel bill, is foolishly perceived to be, and treated like, divine intervention.

The hypocrisy gets worse because in March of 2013, Pope Francis gave a speech, and because he used complex Catholic terms, most people did not understand the impact of what he said:

*"I thank the Lord that I can celebrate this Holy Mass for the inauguration of my Petrine ministry,"*

-Pope Francis, "Mass, Imposition of the Pallium and Bestowal of the Fisherman's Ring for the Beginning of the Petrine Ministry of the Bishop of Rome," *Vatican Archives*, Mar 19, 2013, retrieved June 8, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2y29Fk6]

The word "Petrine" means in relation to Peter the apostle of Christ, and thus, Francis declared *HIS* "Petrine" ministry, as a spiritual descendant of Peter, which is defined in the Catholic Catechism as supreme, universal rule over all:

*"The Pope, Bishop of Rome and Peter's successor, is the perpetual and visible source and foundation of the unity both of the bishops and of the whole company of the faithful. For the Roman Pontiff, by reason of his office as Vicar of Christ, and as pastor of the entire Church has full, supreme, and universal power over the whole Church, a power which he can always exercise unhindered. The college or body of bishops has no authority unless united with the Roman Pontiff,"*

-Catechism of the Catholic Church, "The Episcopal College and Its Head, The Pope," *Vatican Archives*, Part 1, Section 2, Chapter 3, Article 9, Paragraph 882-883, retrieved June 8, 2018, [vatican.va/archive/ccc\_css/archive/catechism/p123a9p4.htm]

So after giving grand speeches telling everyone that they need to humble themselves, Francis is declaring himself to be Christ on earth, with absolute ruling authority, and expects all to bow to his every word and action because he believes he is divine. It is no coincidence that many governing tyrants and dictators have believed and taught the same thing, and knowing this, it should be no surprise why the Catholic popes have hated the Constitutional Republic of the United States that promotes liberty, and have instead supported Darwinism, Marxism, and communism.

In the same speech, Francis says that it is the job of the entire world to protect things, and he lists out what things he is referring to:

*"To protect Jesus with Mary, to protect the whole of creation, to protect each person, especially the poorest, to protect ourselves: this is a service that the Bishop of Rome is called to carry out, yet one to which all of us are called, so that the star of hope will shine brightly."*

-Pope Francis, "Mass, Imposition of the Pallium and Bestowal of the Fisherman's Ring for the Beginning of the Petrine Ministry of the Bishop of Rome," *Vatican Archives*, Mar 19, 2013, retrieved June 8, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2y29Fk6]

First of all, why does "Mary" need protection? If she is in heaven with the Lord Jesus Christ, as are all the saints of God, then why does she need protection from men? Of course, they are not referring to the Mary of Scripture, but rather, they are referring to their false pagan goddess of the heathen; their idolatrous statues and pagan heresies.

Furthermore, in what manner does Jesus, who is God, need protection? When did He call on Christians to be His personal bodyguards? The Lord Jesus Christ needs no protection, and such a thought is incomprehensibly absurd. It is Jesus Christ who protects us, not the other way around, but again, because Pope Francis is considered to be Jesus Christ on earth, therefore, he is calling for the *WORLD's* protection, not just Catholics, and later in his speech, he called for politicians, economists, and many others to come to his aid and protect himself as Jesus Christ on earth, which essentially destroys any hope of that so-called "humble" persona he hypocritically preaches.

A Catholic dare not say that Pope Francis misspoke either. The Catholic Church declares that when popes speak *ex cathedra* (with full authority), they are "infallible," meaning that they are not capable of making a mistake.

**infallibility** (adj): not fallible; not capable of erring; entirely exempt from liability to mistake

(See 'infallibility', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved June 1, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

The Secretary to the Vatican Council stated:

*"[W]e teach and define as a divinely revealed dogma that when the Roman Pontiff speaks EX CATHEDRA, that is, when, in the exercise of his office as shepherd and teacher of all Christians, in virtue of his supreme apostolic authority, he defines a doctrine concerning faith or morals to be held by the whole Church, he possesses, by the divine assistance promised to him in blessed Peter [i.e. not in Jesus Christ], that infallibility which the divine Redeemer willed his Church to enjoy in defining doctrine concerning faith or morals. Therefore, such definitions of the Roman Pontiff are of themselves, and not by the consent of the Church, irrefragable."*

-First Vatican Council, "On the infallible teaching authority of the Roman Pontiff," *Global Catholic Network*, retrieved June 1, 2018, [ewtn.com/library/councils/v1.htm]

Notice that they claimed that Jesus Christ gave the Pope divine authority to determine all doctrine for the church as a whole. Notice also they did not provide any Scripture on that, but claimed that authority came through Peter, and as we have already learned, there is no Biblical backing for that.

Most Catholics are very aware that their priests teach that the Pope is infallible, but in order to counter Christian teachers like me (who expose them for the deceivers they are), they tell Catholics it is *ONLY* when he is speaking *ex cathedra*. (i.e. They claim the Pope can be wrong if he is not speaking *ex cathedra*.) However, that is a convenient lie because that has never been the official teaching of the Catholic Church, and we can learn more details by looking at the Catechism:

"Bishops who teach in communion with the Roman Pontiff are to be revered by all as witnesses of divine and Catholic truth; the faithful, for their part, are obliged [required] to submit to their bishops' decision, made in the name of Christ, in matters of faith and morals, and to adhere to it with a ready and respectful allegiance of mind. This loyal submission of the will and intellect must be given, in a special way, to the authentic teaching authority of the Roman Pontiff, even when he does not speak *ex cathedra* in such wise, indeed, that his supreme teaching authority be acknowledged with respect, and that one sincerely adhere to decisions made by him."

-"Saint" Ignatius, *The Companion to The Catechism of the Catholic Church: A Compendium of Texts Referred to in The Catechism of the Catholic Church*, 1993, p. 381, ISBN: 9780898704518

Catholics will commonly tell you that their Pope is not completely infallible, and there are many priests who might say the same thing, but again, that has *NEVER* been the official doctrine of the Catholic Church. However, their statement has philosophical implications that the men who wrote this did not consider because it forces Catholics into a contradiction one way or another.

For example, when Pope Francis and the former Pope Benedict contradict one another on the source of the problem with sexual abuse in the Catholic Church, who is right? Which one is infallible?

(See Chico Harlan & Stefano Pitrelli, "Ex-Pope Benedict contradicts Pope Francis in unusual intervention on sexual abuse," *Washington Post*, Apr 11, 2019, retrieved Dec 26, 2020, [<http://wapo.st/3aKYVZ8>])

When Clement the V and Lateran II declared that lending money was wrong, but Pius VIII and Pius XII said it was acceptable (and now the Vatican runs their own bank collecting interest on loans), who is infallible? When Gregory I and Urban II said that owning slaves was good (and the Catholic Church practiced it until 1866), but Leo XIII said it was wrong, who is infallible? In fact, the Second Vatican Council has stated that religious liberty should be allowed to the people in direct violation against the papal decrees of the 18th and 19th centuries to punish "heretics," so why are they directly ruling against the Catholics popes?

(See John Zmirak, "What Do We Do When the Pope Gets It Wrong?" *Stream*, June 24, 2015, retrieved Dec 26, 2020, [[stream.org/what-do-we-do-when-the-pope-gets-it-wrong](http://stream.org/what-do-we-do-when-the-pope-gets-it-wrong)])

When two supposedly infallible statements contradict each other, it means that one of the statements is a lie because there can be only one truth. Therefore, either Catholics have to completely ignore the evidence of lies among their Catholic hierarchy, or they have to accept an illogical absurdity that lies can sometimes be truth.

*God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent: hath he said, and shall he not do it? or hath he spoken, and shall he not make it good?*  
-Numbers 23:19

*In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began;*  
-Titus 1:2

Either way, Catholics are taught to submit to their Pope no matter what he says or does, and such infallibility is, in simple terms, laughable. As explained by the Catechism, Catholics are expected to treat the Pope's doctrines and commandments as if he is speaking *ex cathedra*, even when he is *NOT* speaking *ex cathedra*, which means they have to accept anything he says no matter how absurd or contradictory it is against the Word of God.

It should also be noted that there is no method by which any Catholic can determine if the Pope is speaking *ex cathedra* or not. In other words, if he is right, the priests claim he was speaking *ex cathedra*, but if he is wrong and contradicts himself, the priests claim he was not speaking *ex cathedra*. In short, *ex cathedra* and papal infallibility is facade; a convenient excuse to keep Catholics in line, and convince them to never question a pope, bishop, or priest under any circumstance because if you can never question them, then you will never find the truth, and this is how all religious cults operate.

In 1302, Pope Boniface VIII issued an official decree, which would typically be taken to be speaking *ex cathedra*, that required everyone follow his commandments, or in other words, he used his "supreme authority" to give himself supreme authority. He titled his decree *Unam Sanctam*, meaning "the One Holy" in context of the Catholic Church being united in the following doctrine:

"Furthermore, we declare, we proclaim, we define that it is absolutely necessary for salvation that every human creature be subject to the Roman Pontiff."

-Pope Boniface VIII, "Unam Sanctam," *New Advent*, Nov 18, 1302, retrieved June 1, 2018, [newadvent.org/library/docs\_bo08us.htm]; Transcribed by Bob VanCleeef, Department of Philosophy at the Catholic University of America, 1927.

The popes, bishops and priests of the Catholic Church do not openly teach that today because they know how exclusive it sounds, and since they have evolved into the ecumenical (one-world) movement, it would not help their cause; however, they still believe it secretly. As we have already seen, they teach that Muslims, Buddhists, and all other pagan religions around the world have salvation and are praying to the same god. Thus, the Catholic Church teaches that their popes are both infallible and fallible at the same time, contradicting one another repeatedly, while requiring all Catholics to follow each new pope without question.

On the other hand, even though the Catholic popes, bishops, and priests have an ecumenical agenda, the official teaching of Boniface VII in an official Catholic decree, taught the same thing that the First Vatican Council taught, namely, if you do not accept the Catholic Pope as supreme ruler, then you are damned to destruction:

"So, then, if anyone says that the Roman Pontiff has merely an office of supervision and guidance, and not the full and supreme power of jurisdiction over the whole Church, and this not only in matters of faith and morals, but also in those which concern the discipline and government of the Church dispersed throughout the whole world; or that he has only the principal part, but not the absolute fullness, of this supreme power; or that this power of his is not ordinary and immediate both over all and each of the Churches and over all and each of the pastors and faithful: let him be anathema."

-First Vatican Council, "On the power and character of the primacy of the Roman Pontiff," *Global Catholic Network*, retrieved June 1, 2018, [ewtn.com/library/councils/v1.htm]

Again, anathema from the Catholic Church means that you cannot be saved because, as we covered in earlier chapters, being kicked out of the Catholic Church means that you cannot partake in the Eucharist. If you cannot partake in the Eucharist, then according to their doctrines, you cannot receive God's grace, and if you do not die in God's grace, according to their teaching, you cannot get into purgatory to work your way into heaven.



Charles Spurgeon, a 19th century preacher wrote the following, which I think is well-stated:

"Of all the dreams that ever deluded men, and probably of all blasphemies that ever were uttered, there has never been one which is more absurd and which is more fruitful in all manner of mischief than the idea that the Bishop of Rome can be the head of the Church of Jesus Christ! No, these popes die, and are not! And how could the Church live if its head were dead? The true Head ever lives and the Church ever lives in Him!"

-Charles Spurgeon, quoted by Tom Carter, *Spurgeon at His Best: Over 2200 Striking Quotations*, Baker Book House, 1988, p. 140, ISBN: 9780801082870

In another teaching, Spurgeon said:

"These people who received honour [i.e. popes, bishops, and priests of Rome] had a further difficulty, namely, that, always receiving this undeserved honour, they deceived themselves into believing that they deserved it. A man who deludes other people, by degrees comes to delude himself. The deluder first makes dupes [i.e. a person who is easily deceived] of others and then becomes a dupe to himself. I should not wonder but what the Pope really believes that he is infallible, and that he ought to be saluted as 'his holiness.' It must have taken him a good time to arrive at that eminence of self-deception, but he has got to that, I dare say, by now, and everyone who kisses his toe confirms him in his insane idea. When

everybody else believes a flattering falsehood concerning you, you come at last to believe it yourself, or at least to think that it may be so. These Pharisees, being continually called 'the learned rabbi,' 'the holy scribe,' 'the devout and pious doctor,' 'the sanctified teacher,' almost believed the flattering compliments. They used very grand phrases in those days, and doctors [i.e. a teacher, or a title given to those claimed to be skilled in a profession] of divinity were very common, almost as common as they are now; and the crowd of doctors and rabbis helped to keep each other in countenance [i.e. having a pleased facial expression because they are lifted up in their pride] by repeating one another's fine names till they believed they meant something. Dear friends, it is very difficult to receive honour and to expect it, and yet to keep your eyesight; for men's eyes gradually grow dull through the smoke of the incense which is burned before them;"

-Charles Spurgeon, quoted in *The Metropolitan Tabernacle Pulpit*, Sermons Preached by Spurgeon in 1875, p. 413; Read "[Respecting Persons is Sin](#)" & "[Titles Are Unbiblical in the Church](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.

Praise God that He has made me an anathema out of the wicked Catholic Church, and that He has taught me to sanctify (i.e. divide) myself away from the lies and confusion of the world's largest cult. They teach one thing, then turn around later and teach the exact opposite, which I pointed out early that the Bible calls "double-minded," and because double-minded men are unstable in all their ways, they will end up leaving a trail of bodies in their path.

*A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.*

-James 1:8

*Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.*

-Revelation 22:14-15

For the unstable minds of the popes of Rome, that murderous trail of bodies is more well-known as "The Inquisition."

## — #8 – Catholic Inquisition: The Result of Papal Rule —

inquisition (n): inquiry; examination; a searching; in some Catholic countries, a court or tribunal established for the examination and punishment of heretics; this court was established in the twelfth century via Pope Innocent III

(See "inquisition," *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved June 6, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

As with almost all aspects of history, the further removed we are in time from a particular event, the more it is forgotten. For example, the Jewish Holocaust by the German Nazis in World War II is famously known and understood by the population of most countries around the world since, at the time I am writing this, it was less than 100 years ago, but because the Catholic Inquisition ended almost two hundred years ago, and because it was overshadowed by more recent events like the Nazi regime, many people have forgotten it.

*For there is no remembrance of the wise more than of the fool for ever; seeing that which now is in the days to come shall all be forgotten. And how dieth the wise man? as the fool.*

-Ecclesiastes 2:16

Though the Holocaust only lasted a few years, the Catholic Inquisition lasted over 600 years, and whereas the Holocaust only targeted Jews, the Catholic Inquisition targeted everyone, including born again Christians, Muslims, and alleged "witches," just to name a few. In short, the Catholic Inquisition is a result of the Catholic Church being given supreme power over everyone, including governments, and countless numbers were tortured in unspeakable ways, dying brutal deaths by the hands of the priests and bishops of Rome.

In the early 13th century, groups of Christians in southern France and northern Italy began to study the Bible and sanctify themselves from the Catholic Church. There were various groups given many names (e.g. Waldensians, Albigensians, etc) and they rejected many of the foundational doctrines of the Catholic Church, for example, the sacraments of the Catholic Eucharist, and the lavish wealth and lifestyles of the Catholic clergy, declaring publically that these things opposed the doctrines of Christ.

These Christian groups began to grow in number, which also meant that Catholic numbers began to decrease in those regions, and of course, the Catholic Church labeled them "heretics," but there was no standard, universal way of dealing with those who the Catholic Church labeled as heretics. Prior to this time, the situation was left up to the discretion of individual bishops in the region (which is known in the Catholic Church as a "diocese" [*die-oh-sis*]) where the so-called "heresy" took place. It was at this time that certain men in the Catholic Church were given authority to imprison, torture, and execute all those who opposed the Catholic Church, and they would later be known as the "Inquisitors."

Though many different people of various cultures and beliefs were tortured and executed by the Catholic Church through the office of Inquisition, it all began as persecution against the New Testament Church in the 13th century:

*"When the reformed religion began to diffuse [spread] the Gospel light throughout Europe, Pope Innocent III entertained great fear for the Romish Church. He accordingly instituted a number of inquisitors, or persons who were to make inquiry after, apprehend, and punish, heretics, as the reformed were called by the papists. At the head of these inquisitors was one Dominic, who had been canonized by the pope, in order to render his authority the more respectable. Dominic, and the other inquisitors, spread themselves into various Roman Catholic countries, and treated the Protestants with the utmost severity. In process of time, the pope, not finding these roving inquisitors so useful as he had imagined, resolved upon the establishment of fixed and regular courts of Inquisition. After the order for these regular courts, the first office of Inquisition was established in the city of Toulouse, and Dominic became the first regular inquisitor, as he had before been the first roving [wandering] inquisitor."*

-John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Hendrickson Publishing, 2004, p. 77, ISBN: 9781565637818

Pope Innocent III's predecessors had built a Catholic army of Crusaders (trained soldiers designed to war against the Muslim armies) to command and dispose of at his will (which is in violation against the commandments of the New Testament, [2Co 10:3-5](#)), and so he used their might to help enforce the will of the Inquisitors. As we went over in the previous chapter, the Catholic Church clearly taught that the popes of Rome were never to be questioned, and that their existence was necessary for salvation, but never did one of those popes ever speak a word of rebuke against the torture and murder of the Office of Inquisition; rather, each pope after Innocent III assisted and added to the atrocities of the Inquisition:

*"The record of the Inquisition would be embarrassing for any organization; for the Catholic Church, it is devastating. Today, it prides itself, and with much justification [i.e. excuses], on being the defender of natural law and the rights of man. The papacy in particular likes to see itself as the champion of morality. What history shows is that for more than six centuries without a break, the papacy was the sworn enemy of elementary justice. Of eighty popes in a line from the 13th century on, not one of them disapproved of the theology and apparatus of the Inquisition. On the contrary, one after another added his own cruel touches to the workings of this deadly machine."*

-Peter De Rosa, *Vicars of Christ: The Dark Side of the Papacy*, Poolbeg Press, 2000, ISBN: 9781842230008

It is important to understand that the author I just quoted was not a born again Christian, although some readers may have thought that, but rather, De Rosa is a Roman Catholic historian; meaning that this is coming from historians within the Catholic Church's own ranks. Here are the writings of another Roman Catholic historian from the 19th century, who was extremely dedicated to the Catholic religion, even saying that he did not have the "*slightest shadow of doubt about any dogma of the Catholic Church*," and he wrote the following about the Inquisition:

*"The Inquisition is peculiarly the weapon and peculiarly the work of the popes. It stands out from all those things in which they co-operated, followed or assented as the distinctive feature of papal Rome. **It was set up, renewed and perfected by a long series of acts emanating from the supreme authority in the [Catholic] Church. No other institution, no doctrine, no ceremony is so distinctly the individual creation of the papacy, except the dispensing power.** [i.e. As we learned earlier, the popes would use their supreme authority to give themselves supreme authority.] **It [the Inquisition] is the principal thing with***

which the papacy is identified, and by which it must be judged. The principle of the Inquisition is the Pope's sovereign power over life and death. Whosoever disobeys him should be tried and tortured and burnt. If that cannot be done, formalities may be dispensed with, and the culprit may be killed like an outlaw. That is to say, the principle of the Inquisition is murderous, and a man's opinion of the papacy is regulated and determined by his opinion of religious assassination. If he honestly looks on it as an abomination, he can only accept the Primacy with a drawback, with precaution, suspicion, and aversion for its acts. If he accepts the Primacy [office of the Catholic Church and Inquisition] with confidence, admiration, unconditional obedience, he must have made terms with murder."

-Lord Acton, quoted in *The Nineteenth Century and After*, Leonard Scott Publishing Company, Vol. 55, 1904, p. 772, [Princeton University]; See also *The Messenger*, 1906, p. 536

Many of the people who were tortured and executed by the Catholic Inquisitors were killed over the matter of the Eucharist; meaning that they refused to believe that the bread and wine was the literal body and blood of Christ, which we discussed in Chapter 3. The Catholic Eucharist is an overt heresy to the Gospel of Christ, and it is this idolatry that is so contradictory to our faith in Christ that we Christians are (through the power of the Holy Spirit in us) willing to suffer and die at the hands of our persecutors for that belief in the Word of God.

These are a few examples of the tortured Christians by the Catholic Church:

- John Badby was **burned at the stake** by the Catholic Church in 1410 because he said, "*it was impossible that any priest should make the body of Christ, by words sacramentally spoken.*" [i.e. transubstantiation]  
-John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, W. Grinton Berry Edition, 1998, p. 312, ISBN: 0-8007-8664-5
- John Stilman was **burned alive** by the Catholic Church in 1518 for, "*speaking against the worshipping, praying, and offering unto images; as also for denying the carnal and corporal presence in the sacrament of Christ's memorial.*" [i.e. That means **he denied bread and wine to be the literal Body and Blood of Christ and called out the idolatry of Catholicism**]"  
-John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, W. Grinton Berry Edition, 1998, p. 314, ISBN: 0-8007-8664-5
- Thomas Man, 1518, was **burned at the stake** by the Catholic Church because he, "*denied the corporal presence of Christ's body in the sacrament of the altar; he believed that images ought not to be worshipped,*"  
-John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, W. Grinton Berry Edition, 1998, p. 315, ISBN: 0-8007-8664-5
- John Philpot was **burned at the stake** by the Catholic Church in 1555 for similar reasons, and telling the Catholic Bishops, "*I thank God that I am a heretic out of your cursed church; I am no heretic before God. But God bless you, and give you grace to repent your wicked doings, and let all men beware of your bloody church.*"  
-John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, W. Grinton Berry Edition, 1998, p. 341, ISBN: 0-8007-8664-5
- John Lambert was **burned alive very slowly** by the Catholic Church in 1538 because when asked if the bread was the literal Body of Christ, he replied, "*I deny it to be the body of Christ.*"  
-John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, W. Grinton Berry Edition, 1998, p. 321, ISBN: 0-8007-8664-5

To understand the brutal nature of the Inquisitors, let's take a closer look at the last man on the list, John Lambert. His execution took place in Smithfield, a place in which so many Christians were burned alive, the smell of smoldering flesh probably still lingers in the air:

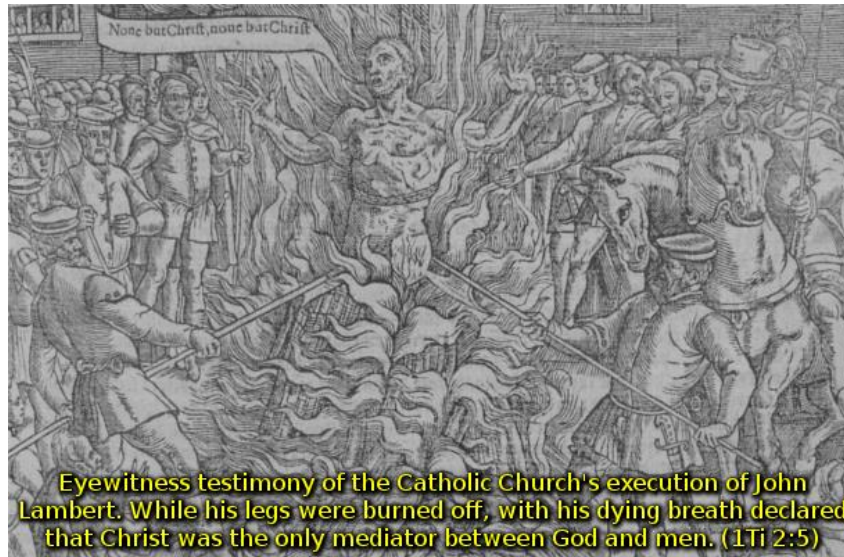
"As touching the terrible manner and fashion of the burning of this blessed martyr, here is to be noted, that of all others who have been burned and offered up at Smithfield, there was yet none so cruelly and piteously handled as he. For, after that his legs were consumed and burned up to the stumps, and that the wretched tormentors and enemies of God had withdrawn the fire from him, so that but a small fire and coals were left under him, then two that stood on each side of him, with their halberts pitched him upon their pikes, as far as the chain would reach, after the manner and form that is described in the picture adjoined. Then he, lifting up such hands as he had, and his fingers' ends flaming with fire, cried unto the people in these words, 'None but Christ, none but Christ;' and so, being let down again from their halberts, fell into fire, and there ended his life."

-John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs: The Acts and Monuments of the Church*, G. Viture, Vol. 2, 1844, p. 473

[For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;](#)  
[-1 Timothy 2:5](#)



In case you did not understand what he was describing, the Catholic Church set fire to this man because he refused to confess the Catholic heresy of transubstantiation; meaning that he would not believe that the wafer and wine was the literal body and blood of Christ. Half-way through his burning, still alive, skin smoldering, when his legs had been burned to his thighs, they stopped the fire, impaled his stumped legs with spears, and lifted him up as high as the chains which bound him to the stack would allow, in order for him to address the crowd and give him another chance to confess the Catholic heresy, but instead he shouted, "*None but Christ!*"



Whereas those of us born again in Christ are willing to suffer and die for the Lord Jesus Christ, the Catholic Church is not willing to do the same. They are only willing to torture and kill for the false god they serve.

It was not just the Christians who stood firmly on the foundation of the Word of God, but anyone could have been vaguely accused of heresy and been found guilty by an Inquisitor. This is why Inquisitors (and their lackeys) were so feared; they had power so great, they were feared by some European kings. **The Inquisitors of the Catholic Church could torture and execute someone on simply a rumor, or make up one themselves, without any evidence whatsoever, and there was no governing power to keep them in check.**

*"Courts of Inquisition were now erected in several countries; but the Spanish Inquisition became the most powerful, and the most dreaded of any. Even the kings of Spain themselves, though arbitrary in all other respects, were taught to dread the power of the lords of the Inquisition; and the horrid cruelties they exercised compelled multitudes, who differed in opinion from the Roman Catholics, carefully to conceal their sentiments... The most zealous of all the popish monks, and those who most implicitly obeyed the Church of Rome, were the Dominicans and Franciscans: these, therefore, the pope thought proper to invest with an exclusive right of presiding over the different courts of Inquisition, and gave them the most unlimited powers, as judges delegated by him, and immediately representing his person: they were permitted to excommunicate, or sentence to death whom they thought proper, upon the most slight information of heresy. They were allowed to publish crusades against all whom they deemed heretics, and enter into leagues with sovereign princes, to join their crusades with their forces."*

-John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Claxton, 1881, p. 77-78, [University of Virginia]

This is disgustingly hypocritical of a worldwide religious entity that claims to uphold the doctrines of Jesus Christ. Where is any justification for these acts listed out in the New Testament? As we have already established in earlier chapters, it is not based on the Bible because the Catholic Church follows the popes and their deceptive traditions.

*For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;*

*-2 Corinthians 10:3-5*

*For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.*

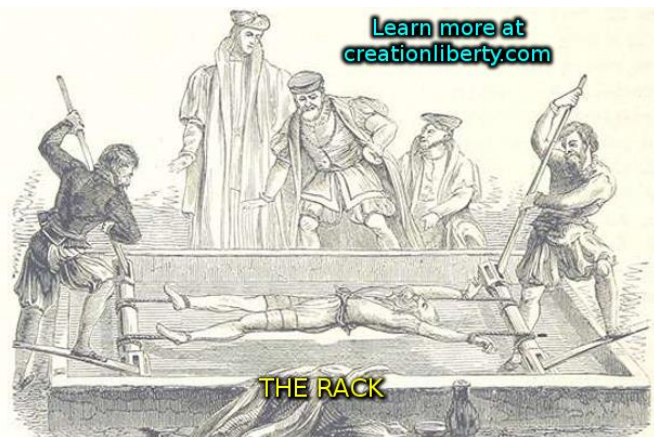
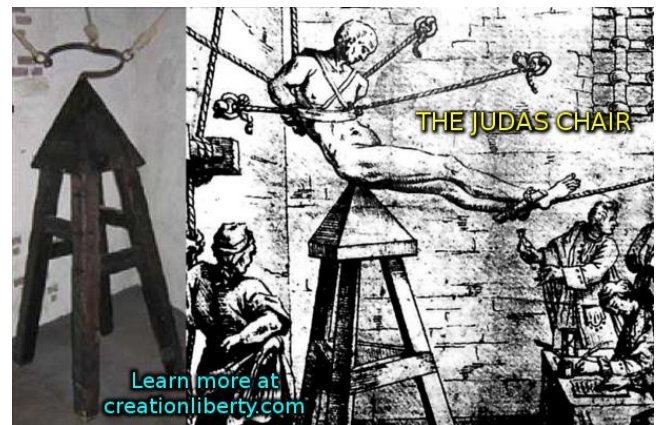
*-Ephesians 6:12*

*And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate [sinful] mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity [destructive tendencies]; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.*

*-Romans 1:28-32*

I have emphasized the words "inventors of evil things" because we can only begin to imagine the uncountable atrocities committed by the popes and inquisitors in the name of their false Catholic god. Though it is unpleasant to consider, it is important for all who will hear to understand the true face of the papacy; that all this was appointed by the popes of Rome, and hopefully, Catholics will come to understand the true nature of the cult in which they put their faith.

One of the devices used by sadistic Inquisitors was "The Judas Chair," which was a seat designed with a pyramid shape. Prisoners, male or female, would be taken to a room, stripped naked, and lifted by ropes above this pyramid, then slowly lowered down on to the top and made to sit upon it with the top corner of the pyramid inserted into their orifices (anus or vagina, depending on male or female), slowly stretching and ripping the skin, which would cause an immense amount of pain, while the Inquisitor sat comfortably in his normal chair and waited for the so-called "heretic" to confess his/her allegiance to the Roman Pontiff.



Another device called "The Rack" was designed to slowly stretch out a man or woman's arms and legs to the point that his/her joints would dislocate at the hips and shoulders, which is pain most of us cannot imagine. Again, the Catholic Inquisitor would stand beside the device, watching their pain and listening to their screams while calmly waiting to hear a confession of their dedication to the Catholic Church.

The device called "The Skull Crusher" is relatively self-explanatory; the victim's chin was put over the metal bar at the bottom, while the skull cap was placed on top, and a winch was turned so that the skull was slowly crushed by the vice. This is one of the more excruciating devices because the Christian put in this device would have his/her teeth shatter and eyes pop out of their sockets long before their skull shatters enough to cause a loss of consciousness.



Inquisitors also loved to use "The Hand Crusher," which delivered an extraordinary amount of pain without risk of killing their prisoner. As you can see below, the knuckles of the hands were placed under each vice and were slowly crushed, while the victim was forced to stare at a gothic version of the pagan cross symbol of the Catholic Church.

(Read "[Christian Symbols Are Not Christian](#)" here at [creationliberty.com](#) for more details.)

For those of us born again in Christ, we need not fear these things because we cannot withstand this torture on our own, but during trials of tribulation and persecution, the Holy Spirit of God will rain down upon us and give us strength to endure. If you read *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, you will find that eyewitnesses reported odd and miraculous things happening upon the torture and execution of Christians, even some instances in which pain was not felt nor would fire burn, and that we should always remember that, though we are undeserving of the least of His mercies, the Lord Jesus Christ will *NEVER* forsake us because He promised He would be with us.



*In God have I put my trust: I will not be afraid what man can do unto me.*  
-Psalm 56:11

*Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee. So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.*  
-Hebrews 13:5-6

*Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.*  
-Matthew 5:10-12

*Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.*  
-Matthew 10:16-20

If a Catholic happens to be reading this, I want you to understand that these torturous devices are the reality of the religion in which you serve and worship; it is the end result of the absolute power of the Roman Pontiff. Other devices were developed to slowly crush elbows and kneecaps, some were invented for a sexually perverted purpose (only for the sake of decency have I not shown those devices), and the Inquisitors also devised methods for keeping someone alive and conscious while tearing the victim's skin clear to the waist, and before you ask whether I mean from the feet up or the head down—both.

Sadly, the typical Catholic buys into the media hype of a pathetic, useless, propaganda so-called "apology" made by Pope John Paul II in March of 2000. He did this because in 1998, he decided to open up the secret documents stored in the Vatican library concerning the Inquisition, and I will point out the deception of this in a moment, but first, let's read his public relations garbage:

*"Let us forgive and ask forgiveness! While we praise God who, in his merciful love, has produced in the [Catholic] Church a wonderful harvest of holiness, missionary zeal, total dedication to Christ and neighbour, we cannot fail to recognize the infidelities to the Gospel committed by some of our brethren, especially during the second millennium. Let us ask pardon for the divisions which have occurred among Christians, for the violence some have used in the service of the truth and for the distrustful and hostile attitudes sometimes taken towards the followers of other religions."*

-Pope John Paul II, "Day of Pardon," *Vatican Archives*, Mar 12, 2000, retrieved June 7, 2018, [<https://bit.ly/1ZXnGCK>]

Notice that he said he wanted to ask pardon for "*divisions*," not for the gruesome crimes of the papacy, and it should be noted that dividing away from an antichrist religion is not a bad thing. Where is the apologize for the horrifying evils done against innocent men and women, especially for those who were the true believers on Christ?

What this deceitful viper is doing is shifting the blame; it is *NOT* "*some of our brethren*" nor "*violence some have used*," it is the torture and murder of Christians at the hand and authority of *PAPAL ROME*, or in other words, the seat of the Pope who gave the orders! John Paul II was not confessing to the error of the office in which he sits, because after all, as we covered in the last chapter, he and his fellow popes are infallible, so instead, he gives an apathetic and vain so-called "apology" on behalf of "some people," rather than confessing the truth in the humility of repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing).

(Read "[Is Repentance Part of Salvation?](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.*  
-Romans 10:10

*Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing. For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.*  
-2 Corinthians 7:9-10

The statement we just read from Pope John Paul II was a public relations message intended to deceive people into an ecumenical movement under the Pope's leadership; nothing more. John Paul II's statement was void of any understanding of what was done, and it was void of any concern whatsoever for the countless doctrinal offenses and grievous crimes against humanity carried out by the authority of the very throne he sat upon.

Of course, the typical Catholic I have had conversations with will tell me that I am unmerciful or unforgiving, but Christ told us that we only need to forgive when a man repents in grief and sorrow of his wrongdoing. I would be glad to give my mercy and forgiveness to the popes of Rome if they would come to repentance, but they will not do so because they are sitting on the throne of an antichrist.

*Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.*  
-Luke 17:3

What most people do not understand is that this apology was not only vain, but it was also *VERY* deceptive because most people think the Office of Inquisition was shut down after the Italian armies liberated the people from Vatican rule in the 19th century. However, **it never closed**. The Office of Inquisition has always remained open. The Inquisitors still continued after the Inquisition was declared to be over, and today, the Office of Inquisition still operates.

After the Italian Revolution, governments would not allow the Catholic Church to continue their torture and executions openly; if they were done, they had to be done in secret, and we will see some evidence of that when we get to the next chapter. The Second Vatican Council renamed the Office of Inquisition to "*The Office of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith*" to make it sound more pleasant, since the Office of Inquisition already has a bad name: "*By the nineteenth century, most of the gruesome practices had ceased. However, the Office of the Inquisition remained until 1965 when it was reshaped into the Office of the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith during the Second Vatican Council.*"

-Michael Jerryson, *The Oxford Handbook of Religion and Violence*, Oxford University Press, 2015, p. 430, ISBN: 9780190270094; See also Charles Kimball, *When Religion Becomes Lethal*, John Wiley & Sons, 2011, ISBN: 9781118030561

In fact, Joseph Ratzinger, who would later become Pope Benedict XVI, was appointed the "Grand Inquisitor" for the newly reshaped Office of Inquisition:

"Pope John Paul II and his grand inquisitor Joseph Ratzinger (now Pope Benedict XVI) have renamed the Holy Office as the Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith and have revived the antimodernist oath in a new guise."

-Shadia B. Drury, *Aquinas and Modernity*, Rowman & Littlefield, 2008, p. 36, ISBN: 9780742522589



The website *Catholic Hierarchy* is an independent organization of Catholics "*dedicated to our Holy Father, Pope Francis.*" Under the section "Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith," they have it listed as being formed in July of 1542 under the Latin name *Romanae et Universalis Inquisitionis*, which is the Roman Universal Office of Inquisition, and another independent Catholic website "GCatholic" has the same listing.

(See Catholic Hierarchy, "Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith," retrieved Jan 2, 2021, [<https://www.catholic-hierarchy.org/diocese/dxcdf.html>]; *GCatholic.org*, "Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith," retrieved Jan 2, 2021, [<http://www.gcatholic.org/dioceses/romancuria/d03.htm>])

When it concerns the wicked hearts of mankind, the Bible tells us that they will continue the same things they have always done, which is where the phrase "*there is nothing new under the sun*" comes from, specifically in Ecclesiastes 1:9.

*The sun also ariseth, and the sun goeth down, and hasteth to his place where he arose. The wind goeth toward the south, and turneth about unto the north; it whirleth about continually, and the wind returneth again according to his circuits. All the rivers run into the sea; yet the sea is not full; unto the place from whence the rivers come, thither they return again... The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun.*

-Ecclesiastes 1:5-9

The Lord God is explaining to us that just as rivers flow into the oceans, water evaporates into clouds, and comes down as rain into the lakes to flow into the rivers again, so is there a large cycle with mankind all throughout history. In short, the Catholic Church tortured and murdered once, and there may come a time in which they will do it again.

In the final days of this world, the Christians will come under persecution and tribulation again, and depending on which country they are in, some are already experiencing it today. I am convicted to express my grief and disgust with the typical church buildings around just about every corner of America, in which they cannot sanctify themselves from the most simple things in times of peace when they have a choice, but then proclaim in hypocrisy that when the days come where the devilish Papal entity will torturing and murdering that they will stand with Christ.

(Read "[501c3: The Devil's Church](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details on greedy, lukewarm ministries and pastors who have no backbone.)

The Lord Jesus Christ warned us that such lukewarm men (who hypocritically claim that they are not lukewarm), are typically false converts that have never been born again because there is no repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing) in their hearts. They are just men who like to play church to put on a show for their neighbors, and they are the seeds who fell among the stones:

*But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.*

-Matthew 13:20-21

*I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:*  
-Revelation 3:15-17

The Word of God is not a game. This is serious, and we ought to take it seriously because for most people in this world, hell and the lake of fire awaits.

(Read "[Hell Is Real And Many People Are Going There](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.*  
-Matthew 7:13-14

In conversations with Catholics I have often been called a "Catholic-hater" because I bring up the subject of the Inquisition, but that is a quick personal attack (logical fallacy: *ad hominem*) that helps Catholics to deter the conversation away from the facts. (logical fallacy: *red herring*) The truth is that they follow the deceitful feelings of their wicked hearts, and they refuse to hear anything that contradicts what their heart tells them, so I become the target of their hate, when I am loving them by telling them the truth, even when they hate me, because that is what Jesus Christ taught us to do.

*The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?*  
-Jeremiah 17:9

*He that trusteth in his own heart is a fool: but whoso walketh wisely, he shall be delivered.*  
-Proverbs 28:26

The Catholic Inquisition, among many other Catholic atrocities, triggered what is commonly known today as the "Reformation," which was a large number of people in Europe who began to pull away from the Catholic Church and study the Bible for themselves. Martin Luther was one of the men who lived through the horrors of the Catholic Inquisition, and he said:

*"We here are of the conviction that the papacy is the seat of the true and real Antichrist... personally I declare that I owe the Pope no other obedience than that to Antichrist."*

-Martin Luther, Aug 18, 1520, quoted by LeRoy E. Froom, *The Prophetic Faith of Our Fathers*, Review and Herald, Vol. 2, 1950, p. 121



*"I am persuaded that if at this time, St. Peter, in person, should preach all the articles of Holy Scripture, and only deny the pope's authority, power, and primacy, and say, that the pope is not the head of all Christendom, they would cause him to be hanged. Yea, if Christ himself were again on earth, and should preach, without all doubt the pope would crucify him again. Therefore let us expect the same treatment; but better is it to build upon Christ, than upon the pope."*

-Martin Luther, quoted in *The Table Talk of Martin Luther*, William Hazlitt, Vol. 127, p. 234, [New York Public Library]

This is not to say that I believe that Martin Luther was preacher of Christ because I have my doubts about that since he said and did many things during his time as a preacher that indicated that he did not have a heart of humble repentance. Many Reformation and Protestant leaders claimed to depart from Catholicism while hypocritically upholding Catholic principles and traditions, and I would encourage readers to look at my teaching, "[Denominations Are Unbiblical](#)", here at creationliberty.com for more details.

At the end of this chapter, I will be quoting from many such leaders of the Reformation who I am very cautious of when it concerns their doctrines. However, I wanted to include these testimony so we can get an idea of the disposition and perspective of the Reformers during the dark days of the Catholic Inquisitors in Europe.

As I mentioned in chapter four, there was a period of hundreds of years in Europe that is known as "The Dark Ages," which was a time of grief, suffering, disease, and death. What historians typically do not care to understand is that the Dark Ages in Europe was caused by the Catholic Church, specifically due to their efforts in preventing the common people from reading the Word of God for themselves.

Many people do not know that, at one point, the Catholic Inquisitors **BANNED** the Bible, meaning it was forbidden to own a copy or study it on pain of death. (They would say "*pain of excommunication*," but that was a facade for execution.) This information was discovered not by Christians, but by Catholic librarians and historians after Pope John Paul II began his investigation into the Inquisition's secret files back in 1998:



*"The Vatican permitted scrutiny [detailed analysis and criticism] of one of the most notorious periods in Roman Catholic Church history yesterday when it opened the archives of the department once known as the Inquisition... Opened on Thursday alongside the Inquisition archives was the infamous Index of Forbidden Books, which Roman Catholics were forbidden to read or possess on pain of excommunication. [i.e. pain of death after being branded a "heretic"] They showed that even the Bible was once on the blacklist. Translations of the Holy Book ended up on the bonfires along with other 'heretical' works because the Church, whose official language was Latin, was suspicious of allowing the faithful access to sacred texts without ecclesiastical [Catholic] guidance."*

-Stabroek News, "Vatican Archives Reveal Bible Was Once Banned Book," Jan 23, 1998, p. 10

Of course, only allowing the study of Scripture through the guidance of a priest or bishop in the same manner as any other religious cult correlates with everything we have read so far in this book. This ban and burning of Bibles by the Catholic Church was done very quickly after the formation of the Office of Inquisition, as early as 1244, which was just a few years after it was established, and not only did they ban Bibles, but there was strict punishment for anyone who even dared to read the Bible in English:

*"In 1244, their power was farther increased by the emperor Frederic the Second, who declared himself the protector and friend of all the inquisitors, and published the cruel edicts, viz. 1. That all heretics who continued obstinate, should be burnt. 2. That all heretics who repented, should be imprisoned for life... The principal accusation against those who are subject to this tribunal is heresy, which comprises all that is spoken, or written, against any of the articles of the creed, or the traditions of the Roman church. The inquisition likewise takes cognizance [notice] of such as are accused of being magicians, and of such who read the bible in the common language,"*

-John Foxe, *Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Claxton, 1881, p. 78, [University of Virginia]

Just to clarify, the Catholic Church believed (and still believes) that those who would study the Bible for themselves are sinners on the same level as witches. This is the extent to which they hate the doctrines of Jesus Christ, and to which they manipulate the masses.

If you were unaware of these facts, it should make us all pause and consider why this historical information is not taught to us in public school classrooms across America. As we have already established, the Catholic Church has long discouraged people from studying the Word of God, and it has caused countless problems.

In fact, Mary Tudor, Queen of England (1553-1558), who was a dedicated follower of the Catholic Church, earned the nickname "Bloody Mary" because of her vicious persecution against Christians. As soon as she took the throne and established the Pope's ruling authority in England, she prohibited the printing of the Bible by law and all Bibles were removed from church buildings across the country.

(See Christopher Haigh, *English Reformations: Religion, Politics, and Society Under the Tudors*, Clarendon Press, 1993, ISBN: 9780198221623; Read "[Why I Use The King James Bible](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

It is good that we Christians ignore any government law that prevents us from studying the Word of God because we are commanded by God to do so:

*Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.*  
-2 Timothy 2:15

*The heart of the righteous studieth to answer: but the mouth of the wicked poureth out evil things.*  
-Proverbs 15:28

(Read "[Should Christians Submit to Governing Authority?](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Many other well-known Reformers stood against the criminal activity of the Catholic Church. Again, I want to emphasize that I am not in accord with many of these men, and I state the reasons for that more clearly in my teaching, "[Denominations Are Unbiblical](#)," here at creationliberty.com, but I wanted to quote these men so we could get an idea of how the Pope was viewed, and why there was such backlash from the Catholic Inquisitors.

John Calvin wrote:

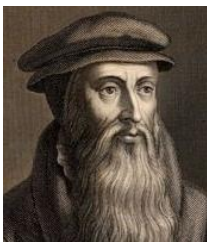
*"Some persons think us too severe and censorious when we call the Roman pontiff Antichrist. But those who are of this opinion do not consider that they bring the same charge of presumption against Paul himself, after whom we speak and whose language we adopt... I shall briefly show that they [Paul's words in II Thess. 2] are not capable of any other interpretation than that which applies them to the Papacy."*

-John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, H. Howe, 1816, Vol. 3, p. 149



*Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.*

-2 Thessalonians 2:3-4



John Knox said the same thing about the papacy when he wrote about "*that tyranny which the pope himself has for so many ages exercised over the church.*" He was firmly convinced that the Pope of Rome is "the very antichrist, and son of perdition, of whom Paul speaks," which again is from 2 Thessalonians 2, but it should be noted that the Bible says there would be many antichrists before the final one in [1 John 2:18](#).

(See John Knox, quoted by John Hunter & Hastings Robinson, *The Zurich Letters*, University Press, 1842, p. 199)

*Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.*

-1 John 2:18



Even before the Catholic Church was formed, there were many antichrists roaming around, which is why I say that the throne of the Roman Pontiff is the seat of the son of perdition, but the individual popes we have seen so far are not the son of perdition himself, and though Knox was correct in his analysis of the Pope's wickedness, he was incorrect in the analysis of doctrine. I would rather say that the same evil spirit hangs over all of the popes, as well as the many corrupt denominations that came out of the Reformation. The Catholic popes are numbered among the many antichrists before the final antichrist appears, but the persecution and tribulation coming from the Catholic Church was so great, the Reformers were convinced that the pope of their day was the son of perdition prophesied in 2 Thessalonians 2, even though Jesus Christ had given signs for his return that had not yet come to pass, but because the persecution they were suffering was worse than they had ever seen or heard of before, in combination with their misinterpretation of [Matthew 24:21](#), they mistakenly believed they were in the final days before Christ's return.

(Read "[The Beginner's Guide to Christian Rapture](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details on the fact that Paul rebuked pre-tribulation rapture false prophecy.)

Thomas Cranmer wrote:

*"Whereof it followeth Rome to be the seat of antichrist, and the pope to be very antichrist himself. I could prove the same by many other scriptures, old writers, and strong reasons."*

-Thomas Cranmer & John Edmund Cox, *The Works of Thomas Cranmer*, University Press, 1846, Vol. 16, p. 63



The doctrine of the Bible, which points to the seat of the Pope being the throne of antichrist, began to spread far and wide, and since the Catholic Church was no longer able to stop it, the Jesuit Priest Manel De Lacuna, with the help of some of his Jesuit brethren, wrote *La Venida Del Mes'as en Gloria y Magestad* (i.e. *The Coming of the Messiah in Glory and Majesty*) in the 18th century, under the pseudonym (fake name) "Rabbi" Juan Josafat Ben-Ezra in order to fake some Jewish heritage to add some perceived credibility to the book. The book's purpose was to change some of the prophecies and timelines of Revelation, so that the Jesuits could protect the Roman Pontiff from being seen as antichrist, and in the 19th century, Edward Irving translated Lacunza's book into English, taking his doctrines and applying them to the Charismatic movement, and that is where the "Pre-Tribulation" false prophecy was born. (This is why you do not see "Pre-Trib" doctrine taught anywhere in history before the 19th century.) In summary, the false pre-trib doctrine we see in church buildings all over the world today was a Jesuit farce that was created to counter the mass exodus of the Reformation.

(Read "[The Beginner's Guide to Christian Rapture](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details on the history and deception of the pre-tribulation rapture movement.)

There is more to be said on this topic, especially from the Bible, but we will go over those details later in chapter eleven. For now, let's switch gears and take a closer look at nuns; the poor souls of women who are, in this author's opinion, more used and abused than anyone else in the devilish Catholic system.

## #9 – Nuns: The Brides of Satan



There are many people, especially Catholics, who will be offended by the title of this chapter, but keep in mind that this is not something I write or say lightly. Though nuns are typically called the "brides of Christ" by the Catholic Church, they are actually marrying themselves to the Devil and his doctrines.

**nun** (n): a woman member of a religious order, especially one bound by vows of poverty, chastity, and obedience

**convent** (n): a community of persons devoted to religious life under a superior; a society of nuns

(See 'nun' & 'convent', *Random House Dictionary*, 2018, [dictionary.com]; See also *Collins English Dictionary*, 10th Edition, William Collins Sons & Co, 2012)

It is important for readers to understand that nuns and convents are not Biblical in any sense. There is no place in Scripture where Jesus commanded women to be a part of a "religious order," to bind themselves by "vows of poverty, chastity, and obedience," and though we have elders and deacons in the church, they are to be servants, not lords over everyone else, and therefore, is there is no Biblical mandate that any of these people should be bound to a religious community under religious superior who rules over them.

*But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.*

-Matthew 20:25-28

*Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.*

-1 Peter 5:2-3

Nuns go through an actual marriage ceremony upon their initiation into the Catholic convents; being taught to believe they are marrying themselves to Christ. When you see a nun with a white veil, that means she is an initiate, and that white veil represents a wedding dress (i.e. they believe they are marrying Christ himself in spirit and in flesh), but if you see a nun with a black veil, she has taken vows of poverty and chastity in which she forswears the pleasures of the world so that she can suffer for her own sins, and the sins of the world. (i.e. The Catholic Church is teaching her to become her own Christ in a sense, to pay for sins through her own works, which is false doctrine, as we covered in chapter five.)



In Scripture, the bride of Christ is the church, just as the body of Christ is those Christians that make up the church. These verses are not referring to individual women.

*Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;*

-Ephesians 5:25

*For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ.*

-1 Corinthians 12:12

*So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.*

-Romans 12:5

*Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.*

-Romans 7:4

The marriage that is being spoken of here is not virgin girls being married to Christ directly, but the church, the body of Christ, being married to Him in spirit as a whole; again, *NOT* individuals through a physical marriage ceremony. The entire concept of virgin nuns marrying Christ is a ritual invention of the Catholic Church, and is not supported anywhere in the Word of God.

In the New Testament, there are three institutions the Lord God established for Christ's church specifically: One is government (i.e. the state, for the punishment of evildoers), one is marriage, and the other is the church itself, which is the body of believers (i.e. not a physical building - [1Co 6:19](#)). You will find no Scripture whatsoever in the Bible where God instituted "nuns" or "convents."

Those who have grown up in the Catholic Church will understand that the general doctrine taught in Catholicism (according to their own Catechism) is that "grace" is only a help to introduce one "*into the intimacy of the Trinitarian life.*" What this means is that Catholics are taught that they must work to *ADD* to the finished work of the Lord Jesus Christ ([John 19:30](#)), and one of the ways women are taught to do this in the Catholic Church is by becoming a nun; suffering her whole life both for her own soul, and for those in purgatory.

(See Catechism of the Catholic Church, Part 3, Section 1, Chapter 3, Article 2, "Grace and Justification," Canon #1997, retrieved July 25, 2018, [[vatican.va/archive/ccc\\_css/archive/catechism/p3s1c3a2.htm](http://vatican.va/archive/ccc_css/archive/catechism/p3s1c3a2.htm)])

Because the Catholic Church has spent many centuries building a reputation for nuns, I am often branded as an evil man for daring to expose the Catholic convents, but the fact is that nothing they are doing is of Christ, and just like most of those in the Catholic Church, nuns will have their part in the lake of fire if they do not come to repentance and faith in Christ alone. Therefore, I say these things for their sakes as much as everyone else reading this. If those of you who are skeptical would be willing to read this chapter, you will learn the truth of what goes on behind closed doors in these convents, and what many women have had to suffer under the guise of being "a bride of Christ."

In chapter two, we looked closely at the pagan concept of Purgatory, which I pointed out is the bread-and-butter (i.e. the primary money-maker) of the Catholic Church, but without the nuns, the false doctrine of Purgatory would not make the Catholic Church near as much money. The nuns are, for the most part, the backbone of the Catholic Church because without nuns, the world would not be so willing to believe the lie that the Catholic Church is "good."

Hospitals, orphanages, nursing homes, soup kitchens—you will not often see the Catholic priests, bishops, and popes doing this work; it is the nuns who break their backs to do charitable works, and the nuns are the ones who do all the evangelistic outreach for the papacy. Sadly, though some may have pure intentions, none of those charitable works glorify the Lord Jesus Christ, but rather, the entire institution is designed to give the Catholic Church a good name so they can continue to deceive the masses with lies that will lead them to the wide gates of destruction.

*Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.*

*-Matthew 7:13-14*

Since the Catholic institution of nunnery is mostly female, I think it is best I let former nuns speak for themselves. It should be noted that mainstream Catholic sources, such as *Catholic Answers*, write off these testimonies as "propaganda," pointing to past publications which may indeed have been fraudulent (i.e. I would not argue that there have never been fraudulent claims made against the Catholic Church), but they teach Catholics to believe that *EVERY* testimony that comes out of the convents is just made up, and not only is that false and unreasonable conjecture (i.e. a guess that is not based on any facts, and is based on blind faith in Catholicism), it is also the typical attitude I witness in Catholics when I tell them about these testimonies.

(See Robert P. Lockwood, "Convent Horror Stories," *Catholic Answers*, Mar 1, 2008, retrieved July 7, 2018, [[catholic.com/magazine/print-edition/convent-horror-stories](http://catholic.com/magazine/print-edition/convent-horror-stories)])

Let's start with former nun Lolly Harding, who was a medical nun working in a Catholic mission for thirteen years, helping Muslim women. Muslim women often cannot get medical treatment because according to the ridiculous tenets of their pagan religion, men are not allowed to touch any woman that is not his wife, even if her life is on the line.

(Read "[Islam: Religion of Terror](#)" here at [creationliberty.com](http://creationliberty.com) for more details.)



Harding testified that she eventually left the mission and the nuns due to the terrible conditions and lack of love among nuns in general. As I have already stated, it is common that people view nuns as the most merciful and kindest people in the world, but the truth is far less fanciful. Please do not misunderstand; I am not saying that there are not kind or merciful nuns, but there is an outward appearance with an inward corruption to all institutions of the Catholic Church.

*Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.*  
-John 7:24

*Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.*  
-Matthew 23:26

Harding also testified that while she was stationed as a nun in Pakistan, one of the nun surgeons, who they called "Sister Barbara," was a skilled surgeon who over-worked herself for many years. (Harding testified that she had done a skin graft for a Muslim woman who had her face torn apart by a bear, and had restored most of her face for her; thus, the woman was a very experienced and knowledgeable surgeon.) Barbara ended up taking the drug Demerol to help keep her going (i.e. she would have the younger nun nurses bring it to her for a "patient," but then take it herself), which is sorcery by definition (i.e. sorcery comes from word "pharmakia," which is where we get the word "pharmaceutical"), and the nun got so addicted to it, she ended up living the rest of her days in a state of mind-numbing addiction, being unable to function normally, and she was "left to wander about the hospital grounds and was neither given treatment nor sent away from the source of drugs, but simply forgotten."

(See Lolly Harding, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 16, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8)

### **Psychotropic Drugs Are Not Uncommon Among Nuns**

I have read and listened to numerous testimonies from Christian women who were former nuns. (i.e. They were born again in Christ and came out of the Catholic Church.) Many of them testified that nuns were commonly taking psychotropic drugs, which are drugs that affect the mind, emotions, and other basic behaviors.

Often, these women testified that nuns were taking Valium or Xanax to calm their anxiety because of the harsh, unbiblical living conditions and work load they suffered on a daily basis. Taking these drugs makes people feel drunk, have lack of coordination (which is dangerous in some situations, like those in the medical field), and they can cause extreme irritation, dry mouth, fever, difficulty breathing, heart palpitations, slurred speech, stomach cramps, delayed reflexes, depression, nausea, seizures, bladder control problems, blurred vision, dementia, and worst of all, addiction.

(See Patrick Condron, "The Effects of Valium Use," *DrugAbuse.com*, retrieved July 26, 2018, [drugabuse.com/library/the-effects-of-valium-use])

Obviously, these drugs can kill people, and have killed people, but the Catholic Church allows these women to destroy themselves on these drugs, so long as they continue to put their faith into their "holy" mother church. I have a free-to-read book here at creationliberty.com called *Psychology: Hoodwinked by the Devil* where you can learn more details about the fraudulent psychological industry and their dangerous psychiatric medication.

Harding could no longer tolerate that kind of lifestyle, and although she tried to go back to cloistered life in Kokomo, Indiana, she eventually requested to be released from her vows as a nun and joined the military as a nurse. Although she generally stuck to her Catholic roots, as most people who are starved of any pleasure and were under a bond of chains for much of their lives, Harding turned to drunkenness, fornication, and covetousness, and she was able to easily become addicted to those things, looking for any kind of worldly solace during the Vietnam War.

According to Harding's testimony, her brother showed up to a family reunion after he had been saved by Jesus Christ. With his King James Bible in hand, he told his family they "were all headed for hell" because the Bible clearly states, as we covered in earlier chapters, that there is only one mediator between God and men, and that is Jesus Christ.

(Read "[Why I Use The King James Bible](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;*

*-1 Timothy 2:3-5*

Though Harding resisted at first, eventually, through study and conversation with her brother, the Lord God gave her a heart of repentance, and she was born again in the Lord Jesus Christ. Harding, a former nun, wanted to give as many Catholics as she could the following message:

*"I beg you to do as I did. Come to Jesus Christ as a lost soul and trust His blood atonement at Calvary to pay for your sins. He took your place on the Cross to pay for the sins of the whole world. Receive this gift of eternal life from Him by your acceptance of His complete payment of your sin by His death, burial and resurrection. The Catholic Church has deprived you of the simple plan of salvation and has substituted a tortuous plan of works. There is no need for the pagan sacrifice you make at Mass or the futile confessing of sins to a priest. Jesus Christ awaits you,"*

-Lolly Harding, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 19, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8

I also listened to a live interview with Lolly Harding, in which she testified that the young women who enter these convents are brainwashed into the belief that the sister superior (i.e. the nun who rules over the convent) is equivalent to the Word/Will of God:

*"She [the sister superior] represents God's will... they have to accept you into the order, and you are thoroughly brainwashed into the idea that you are doing God's will, and that the superior represents the will of God for you... during that whole period time [initiate training] there is a very strict regimentation of—they have strict rules and regulations that go back into the 14th/15th century."*

-Lolly Harding, "Lolly Harding a Former Catholic Medical Nun," Dave Flang, May 11, 2009, retrieved July 19, 2018, [youtu.be/GOR3JuQuvqo?t=4m15s]

Part of those rules are those of penance, in which nuns (and priests) are trained to physically beat and whip themselves, to torture themselves, for those who are suffering in purgatory:

*"We thought that we had to do penance to save the world. We were mistaken. We did not have the truth—we did not have the truth as it is in the King James Bible. We had this idea that we had to save the world by our penitential life, and by living this strict life, isolating yourself, pray—get up at 5:30 in the morning, and I remember flagellating [whipping]. I remember this mother superior, and she really flagellated herself; I could hear her whipping herself. They were very devout, misinformed, ignorant, beautiful creatures... and this is the tragedy of this whole thing. We thought we were doing something right for the world, and we were going to help sinners get to heaven by our life of penance."*

-Lolly Harding, "Lolly Harding a Former Catholic Medical Nun," Dave Flang, May 11, 2009, retrieved July 19, 2018, [youtu.be/GOR3JuQuvqo?t=12m50s]

Again, this is not based on Biblical instruction or institution; all of the nun regulations and rules are based on the made-up traditions of the Catholic Church in respect to their doctrine of purgatory, which has no Scriptural or factual basis whatsoever. Some of these rules about beating and whipping oneself were changed a few decades ago in the United States (as we will see in another testimony later), but this has been normal operating procedure for the Catholic convents and parishes for many centuries, and there are many countries who still practice the Catholic self-flagellating ordinance.



Rita Riel

Rita Riel entered a Catholic boarding school in Massachusetts; specifically a section divided for "juvenists," which were girls who were training to be nuns. After being there a mere two weeks, she knew she wanted to leave and return to her father's home because it was a secluded life of being little seen, never heard, and living in constant fear. Riel wrote home to her parents to let them know she no longer wanted to attend, but three days later, the head mistress walked in with her letter, unsealed, in hand, pressuring this young girl to stay, and later, even threatened her by saying that if she left and did not become a nun, God would curse her and punish all her children if she ever got married.

(See Rita Riel, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 36, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8)

Riel stayed in the convent and became a nun in fear of the threat the mistress had made to her, fearing that God would curse her children if she did not stay at the convent. She wanted to become a teacher, and studied to be able to do so, but the convent deceived her because they had her become a nun instead of finish high school, so she was not allowed to be a teacher. (i.e. This is one of the ways they keep up their number of nuns; they must trick young girls into doing it.)

(See Rita Riel, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 37-38, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8)

Through a series of circumstances, all guided by the Lord God, she was later given the opportunity to replace a nun teacher who had fallen ill with cancer, and she started out being given a classroom of 47 second-graders. From there, she not only was able to go on to attend universities to learn more about teaching, but more importantly, she began to study the Bible for herself, learning that all have sinned and come short of the glory of God ([Rom 3:23](#)), that she needed to repent ([Luke 24:47](#)), and believe on the Lord Jesus Christ alone ([John 20:31](#)), in His grace alone, for her salvation; eventually, she was able to understand enough about the Bible to know that she did not need to be a nun to please the Lord.

(Read "[The Cure For Cancer](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Mary Hertel grew up in a highly strict Catholic family who were completely dedicated to the daily rituals of the Catholic Church. The Eucharist, Mass, rosaries, novenas (a series of special prayers for nine days), "*and other special devotions to Mary, the Sacred Heart, the Infant of Prague, St. Joseph, St. Anthony, St. Christopher and others were rituals of our daily life.*" Hertel's family gave the utmost honor and respect unto those who dedicated their lives to the Catholic Church, and thus, Hertel made the decision to become a nun after high school in order to please her family, and, as she thought at the time, to please God.

(See Mary Hertel, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 47-48, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8)

Hertel said:

*"This decision to become a religious [nun] was supported especially by my mother. It was a matter of pride and honor for the family. At the time I entered in 1963, the rule was that I would never return home. As a postulant [nunnery candidate], communication with family was monitored (letters written home and received from home were read) and strict rules were in place for the years of training. After the first year, a bridal ceremony followed by the cutting of my hair and dressing in full restrictive habit [nun garment] ushered me into the Novitiate [house for nun novices]. I was now Sister Mary Dolora."*

-Mary Hertel, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 48, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8

Hertel testified that she was required to fall on her knees and do penance (i.e. voluntary self-punishment for sin) for ridiculous things; for example, she was required to do penance for simply speaking with an elderly nun while she cared for the old woman during infirmary duty because the Catholic Church as imposed absolute silence on these young women in the convents at all times. Thankfully, the year before she was required to do self-flagellation (i.e. whipping oneself), changes were made in the Catholic Church to discontinue that practice in the convents (which was a political move, not a religious one, as I will explain in a moment), and the ban on visiting home was lifted; however, many elder nuns and priests attempted to keep some of the more strict rules, even denying Hertel the permission to help certain injured and lame people on the basis of keeping the nuns in line.

Hertel also testifies that her convent was given a task to design a less-restrictive habit (i.e. garment) for the nuns to wear. Why they had them do this was also never explained to them, and she was quite surprised because such things had been done for many centuries in the Catholic Church. (The elder nuns and priests did not like this change either.)

(See Mary Hertel, "The Grace of God Brought a Nun to the True Jesus Christ," Dave Flang, May 5, 2012, retrieved July 25, 2018, [youtu.be/Nr-JSUIxNE0?t=8m40s])



It should be noted there is no solid explanation given by the Catholic Church as to why they eased up on the rules (Hertel also testified that no explanation was ever given to or made by any superiors), but it leaves us curious for a reason because those rules had been established by popes and bishops (which are supposed to be absolute, unchangeable divine laws), and were practiced for centuries, so why the sudden change? Hertel even confesses that the nuns and priests in her convent were very confused by all these changes, but I believe I can offer a reasonable explanation for it.

The fact is that this was all taking place in the 1960s, during a time of rebellion and social change in the United States, and so this was a political movement specifically for American convents to keep people from exposing the Catholic Church, or in other words, if the Catholic Church had not relaxed their grip, the massive exodus of those leaving the convents and parishes that took place in the 1970s would have been much more severe, especially with the growing feminist movement. This is not to say that the feminist movement was good, but that there was growing investigation into anything having to do with women in the United States. As we have already established, the Catholic Church does not make decisions based on what God says, but as every other cult in existence, they make decisions based on the winds of political change.

(Read "[Feminism: Castrating America](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;*  
*-Ephesians 4:14*

In addition, Hertel testified that there was a lot of lewdness and sexual interaction that went on between priests and nuns in the convents and parishes that was kept private, away from public knowledge:

*"When you're dealing with chastity in a false system that has been set up and made by man, the infractions [violation of rules] are going to come in. In my own experience, as being a nun, my first assignment, which I left after that assignment, but in that assignment there were parties that were given by the priest. The priests had freedom, and they had money, and they had parties where there was drinking and there was dancing and there was inappropriate interaction between the nuns and the priests. So that was my personal experience in the convent that really disturbed me because it certainly was against the rules, but it was also something that was kind of known that was going on here and there. But then when I got out of the convent in my job that I took in Chicago, I was teaching with another woman, a lay woman, who, after a period of time, had a very long stretch of depression. She locked herself in her apartment, and wasn't answering phone calls or her door, and I found out she had been having a very lengthy affair with a priest; the same priest that was coming into our classrooms and teaching religion to our elementary students. She was devastated. This was just cut off. It's as if there was no consequences on the side of the priest that had been involved with her; at least, we didn't see them externally, but for my friend, there were devastating consequences."*

-Mary Hertel, "The Grace of God Brought a Nun to the True Jesus Christ," Dave Flang, May 5, 2012, retrieved July 25, 2018, [youtu.be/Nr-JSUIxNE0]

This should be no surprise since this was always a common practice among priests in the Catholic Church. This is standard operating procedure for most of them. For many hundreds of years, priests were allowed to keep concubines (i.e. whores), to use and throw away at will, and walked around with them in open, unashamed fornication, as we read the testimony of a Christian martyr that will speak more to point in chapter eleven.

Hertel left the convent after six years of being a nun, and remained a Catholic for another 18 years before she was born again in the Lord Jesus Christ. During a series of major life changes, including job changes, children, and family deaths, the Catholic Church made a vital mistake: They gave Hertel and her husband (Bernie) a Bible. Granted, it was a Catholic version (i.e. NASV) that has many flaws in it, but there is enough of the Gospel still in that version, it eventually led the couple to seek out born again Christians and the King James Bible, which they began to study on a regular basis. By 1990, Hertel and her husband came to repentance and had been born again in the Lord Jesus Christ, departing forever from convents, parishes, and the corrupt, pagan, and restraining rituals of the Catholic Church.

I repeat, there is *NO* Biblical mandate that commands or allows the institution of a convent or a nunnery. All the traditions they practice within those places are based solely on the Catholic tradition of men; they are not based on the Word of the Living God.

*Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.*

*-Galatians 5:1*

Mary Pakiz converted to Catholicism in 1948 at the age of eighteen:

"Rather than searching the Scriptures for truth to find out if Catholic teaching was in line with God's Word, I blindly accepted everything the priest told me during my instructions to become a Catholic, except for one request. He asked me to bring my King James version of the Bible to the rectory. He said it had to be burned because it was not the official Catholic version. Instead, I gave it to my mother."

-Mary Pakiz, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 62, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8



Pakiz goes on to describe that great emphasis was put on the Catholic Pope being the infallible authority on earth, that he was never to be questioned, and by 1950, she followed that authority into the Order of St. Benedict as a nun, being influenced by other nuns that worked in the same hospital as she did. Pakiz's testimony is a bit different because she was very happy her first year in the convent, having a head mistress that was kind and gentle, but she confessed that she "knew little about Him [Jesus Christ] other than He was the Son of God."

During Pakiz's training to be a nun, she was not instructed or guided into study of the doctrines of Christ:

"During the five year preparation period for our final vows, we studied the Rule of Saint Benedict, canon law, church history, a bit about Jesuit causistry (the end justifies the means), and the lives of the saints."

-Mary Pakiz, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 64, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8

The "end justifies the means" is an unbiblical doctrine which teaches that it does not matter what you do, so long as you do it for the "right" reasons. In other words, as long as the ending is acceptable, it does not matter what wicked thing you did to get there. The Jesuits have certainly practiced that dogma, through deception and murder, all in the name of the Catholic Church and the Pope of Rome.



Thankfully, the Lord God gave Pakiz some health problems five months before she took her vows as a nun, and she left the convent, but still remained in her Catholic religion. Many years later, after getting married and having two children, the children were invited to attend a backyard Bible study, to which Pakiz's priest oddly gave no objection for them to attend. (i.e. The Lord God's hand was behind it.) It was through the memorization of Scripture by her children that Pakiz learned she was a sinner that was guilty before God, and that she had to come to repentance of her sin, and to have faith in the grace of Christ alone.

There is an important common factor I keep seeing in these wonderful testimonies from former nuns: They had to come to repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow) of their sins. The Catholic Church taught them in the convents that they were the "holy" brides of Christ, who were to suffer for their own sins and the sins of the world, and that leaves them with the dangerous false impression that nuns are inwardly "good," and that they have no sin. (i.e. If you remember from chapter six, the Catholic Church teaches the false doctrine that Mary, the virgin who gave birth to Jesus, had no sin, and the nuns are intended to follow in those footsteps.)

*As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.*  
*-Romans 3:10-12*

**The Bible does not say there is a nun righteous.  
 The Bible says there is *NONE* righteous.**

Another common factor in all these testimonies is that these women thought they would be found righteous before God through their works as a nun; meaning they thought being a nun would help them and their families gain entrance to heaven through their works, and the Catholic Church has used and abused them without remorse. In essence, these women are taught to put nunnery in the place of Jesus Christ for their salvation.

For example, Jo Kaminski was baptized into the Catholic Church at age 19, and sought to become a nun:

*"Because of all these things, I seriously considered becoming a nun to save my soul and to serve God, Whom I thirsted after and longed to please in spite of discomfort in His company. I thought if I were a sister, God would give me a little more consideration at judgment. Nuns are called 'spiritual brides' of Christ. That sounded pretty safe to me.*"

-Jo Kaminski, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 70, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8



Jo Kaminski

The Lord God slowly convicted her to come out of the Catholic Church and trust in Him alone, and Kaminski finally decided to back away from the Catholic Church, for which the Catholic Church labeled her an excommunicated heretic. Four years later, she was personally convicted to start studying the Bible, and was invited to a Bible study group by a Christian friend, and she finally learned the truth about Christ through the Word of God, that Jesus is the Rock upon which the church is built, not Peter, and she believed on Christ's grace alone for her salvation.

As we have already learned in previous chapters, the priests and bishops of the Catholic Church discourage studying the Bible because they know that understanding the doctrines of Christ ends up leading people away from the Catholic Church. This is because the Word of God sets them free from the chains of works-based doctrines and traditions:

*Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*  
*-John 8:31-32*

It is for the sake of those who are oppressed by wicked men that God promised He would preserve His Word for us:

*For the oppression of the poor, for the sighing of the needy, now will I arise, saith the LORD; I will set him in safety from him that puffeth at him. The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O LORD, thou shalt preserve them from this generation for ever.*

-Psalm 12:5-7

With that understanding, it should be clear now that nuns do not study the Bible because they are not taught to study the Bible. There is this unspoken presupposition that if a woman wears the garb of a nun, she understands Scripture, but that is not the case. I have read many testimonies from former Catholics which demonstrates a common theme that, though they may have quoted some Bible verses in their memorized prayers, they did not understand those verses because they never studied the Word of God; rather, they studied the words of pagan philosophers, Catholic canon, and quotes from famous Catholics throughout the centuries, which muddled the true meaning of the words they were speaking from Scripture.

As aforementioned former medical nun Lolly Harding put it:

*"As a Catholic [nun], you are not allowed to read anything contrary to the Catholic history, or Catholic doctrine, and you are not allowed to openly criticize anything you see that's obviously bad... we were thoroughly—THOROUGHLY imbued with this idea they have all the truth, and you are submitted to them in this blind obedience, and it's a sin if you listen to anything else."*

-Lolly Harding, "Lolly Harding a Former Catholic Medical Nun," Dave Flang, May 11, 2009, retrieved July 19, 2018, [youtu.be/GOR3JuQuvqo]

The aforementioned former nun Mary Hertel said:

*"A lot of people find this hard to believe, but I never saw a Bible in the convent. I never read the Bible. There were Scriptures that are incorporated in the mass, of course, and in prayers and prayer books that we used, but I never studied the Bible, and I didn't even know where the books of the Bible were. They were announced as the readings were done, but I really did not know the Word of God."*

-Mary Hertel, "The Grace of God Brought a Nun to the True Jesus Christ," Dave Flang, May 5, 2012, retrieved July 25, 2018, [youtu.be/Nr-JSUIxNE0?t=10m23s]

Again, to quote former 23-year-veteran Catholic priest Richard Bennett, which I had quoted in the introduction to this book:

*"I also had bought, before I went into the monastery, a Bible. I thought we were going to study the Bible. I spent three pounds sterling buying a Bible, and I thought this is where we were really going to spend our time. I found that the first year was all rituals, devotions... we did all these religious exercises, but we didn't study Scripture. And then, we did start to study intently every day in the second year, but it was the philosophy of Aristotle, a pagan 300 years before Christ. To this day, priests are still trained in the philosophy of Greece. And then, we studied all the philosophies of the world. Then we started, after that, four years of theology of the famous Thomas Aquinas. We did study the introduction to some of the books of the Bible, but always under the authority of the [Catholic] Church. So it was not anything to do with the Word; it was to do with Catholicism."*

-Richard Bennett, "Ex-Catholic Priest (23 Yrs) Richard Bennett," Creation Liberty Evangelism Official Youtube Channel, Nov 15, 2017, [youtube.com/watch?v=f8eylzmDp04]

Try and remember this if any of you who are born again in Christ meet some nuns (or even priests for that matter); do not let their outward appearance intimidate you because these people do not understand the Word of God. Commit verses like [Romans 3:10-12](#) and [First Timothy 2:5](#) to memory, and even in passing, even if they will not hear you initially, quote these verses to them because one day, many years from now, the Lord God may have those men and women recall those verses and seek the truth, so that they too would be saved by Christ on the day of God's Judgment.

Doreen Eberhardt, a nun who was eventually led by the Lord God out of the convent and into the truth of Christ, testified of the truth behind the closed doors of the convent:



*"You are not allowed to tell your family or friends what really happens inside the convent. [i.e. As we've already seen from other testimonies, they monitor all communication going in and out.] Everything was to be presented as a rosy picture, and all suffering, pain, illnesses and unhappiness kept inside yourself. You are robotized to think, act, talk and do the same thing, all at the same time. It is the aspect of fear that keeps girls in the convent, fear of leaving the 'one true Church', as the Catholics like to say, and possibly risking your chance to get to heaven. You are never taught to ask Christ for help or to give thanks to Him. It is always pray to Mary, Joseph, or some other 'Saint' such as Anthony, Jude, etc."*

-Doreen Eberhardt, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 134, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8

I should note that the concept of praying to "saints" or other such people is taken directly from witches and mystics. Without going into great detail, they teach that you should visualize a particular person in your mind and pray to them, which is ultimately praying unto devils because these men and women hear no prayers.

(Read "[The Biblical Understanding of Prayer](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.*

*-Acts 17:22*

Eberhardt continues to give details about Catholic superstitions performed in the convent:

*"There is much superstition found in the convent. For example, they would place a statue of St. Joseph on the window ledge so that it would not rain, but it still rained. They kept a statue of Mary on the dishwasher so that it would continue to work, but it still broke down... In January of 1972, I began to come to an awakening of the truth... God showed me that I should leave [the convent]... When I told my superior of my decision, I was told that I was emotionally upset and not to make such a serious decision for at least another three or four months. I was told that my parents would no longer love me if I left, and that I would not command respect if I did not wear the habit [outfit] of the sisters."*

-Doreen Eberhardt, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 134, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8

Imagine for a moment a Catholic man visited a man's home to buy a car, and the man never did any repair or upkeep on the car (e.g. oil changes, new tires, etc), but rather, he put Mary and Joseph bobblehead figurines on the dashboard, and hung some rosary beads from the rearview mirror. Would that Catholic man buy the car? It is very unlikely the Catholic man would purchase the vehicle; however it is a matter of amazing willful blindness that Catholics would not buy a car under those circumstances, but they will bet their eternal souls on the same flimsy foundation.

These nuns are lied to in order to get them to stay; they are trying to keep nuns in because when one leaves, it makes it very difficult to keep others in. Thus, they lie not only to those who leave, but it stands to reason that they lie to the others about why she left. (e.g. "She departed from the faith," "she sinned," etc.) They also stressed on her the sin of respecting persons; meaning that she ought to want to desire to have her person respected because of what she was wearing.

(Read "[God Does Not Justify Lies](#)" & "[Respecting Persons is Sin](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

For other nuns, the situation is more extreme. Eileen Doran had experienced sexual advances from priests during her tenure as a nun:

*"At one point, I was asked by a priest stationed at the high school to team-teach a drug curriculum with him. We became friendly, but I was totally unprepared for his leading into a more than friendship status. After dinner together in a restaurant one evening, he took me to his rectory room [his room in the house for clergy] and locked the door. It became clear he wanted something more than friendship. [Doran does not indicate if the priest went through with the act.] I sought a transfer to another school, but he continued to be in touch. After his proposal of marriage during my first year in the new position [which nuns and priests are not supposed to do], I began to entertain thoughts of leaving the convent. A short time later, he received permission for further study and changed his proposal to a desire for a special relationship within the confines of the religious life style. [i.e. fornication, or as the world calls it, 'friends with benefits'] Soon after that experience, I was working as director of a retreat. I encountered more than friendly remarks from another priest who was doing the preaching at the retreat."*

-Eileen Doran, quoted by Richard Bennett, *The Truth Set Us Free*, WinePress Publishing, 1997, p. 142, ISBN: 1-57921-067-8

I am in no way justifying fornication by saying this, but what do you expect these men and women to do? They are being forbidden to marry, which is the only Biblical way that God has established to fulfill the burning desire of the flesh to have intimate relations with a mate. The unbiblical pressure the Catholic Church puts on priests and nuns, forbidding them to marry, is what drives them into sin, and unsurprisingly, the Roman Pontiffs ignore very clear rebuke in Scripture on this matter:

*Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; **Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats** [e.g. the Catholic doctrine of no meat on Fridays], which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.*  
-1 Timothy 4:1-3

Sexual abuse of nuns in convents is no isolated incident here or there; it is a problem throughout the world, and most nuns either have directly experienced it themselves, or they have been an indirect observer of the offenses. As I did research on this subject, I found that these things have been reported by many various news sources, but often, they are quickly buried.

For example, a national survey conducted by researchers at St. Louis University in 1996, which was partially paid for by active orders of nuns in the Catholic Church (sadly, they had to have help from other sources since they do not have much money), showed that in the United States alone, approximately 40% of nuns suffered some form of sexual trauma. Obviously, the Catholic Church will not pay for this research because it makes them look bad, and they do not want the public to know the truth of how much sexual deviancy is really going on in the convents and parishes. A group of nuns, alongside other charitable Americans, paid for the study because they wanted to know the truth after seeing so many nuns suffering anger, shame, depression, and fear to the point that some have attempted or committed suicide.

(See Bill Smith, "Nuns As Sexual Victims Get Little Notice," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*, Jan 4, 2003, retrieved July 19, 2018, [snapnetwork.org/female\_victims/nuns\_as\_victims.htm]; See also *Beliefnet*, "Nuns As Sexual Victims Get Little Notice," retrieved July 19, 2018, [beliefnet.com/news/2003/01/nuns-as-sexual-victims-get-little-notice.aspx])

According to the *St. Louis-Dispatch* article:

- Almost 20% (1 out of 5) of nuns said they had been sexually abused as a child before they became nuns; although most from family members, almost 10% were by priests.
- Almost 13% (1 out of 8) had been sexually exploited, meaning that they were given food or other basic needs in exchange for sex.
- Almost 75% (3 out of 4) had been sexually victimized by a priest or another nun, which included everything from so-called 'dates' to sexual intercourse; 40% said their victimization involved some form of genital contact.
- The researchers of the study noted that they underestimated the figures, rather than overestimate them; meaning that the numbers are likely higher than this.

"Findings of the study were published in two religious research journals in the spring and winter of 1998 but have never been reported by the mainstream press."

-Bill Smith, "Nuns As Sexual Victims Get Little Notice," *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*, Jan 4, 2003, retrieved July 19, 2018, [snapnetwork.org/female\_victims/nuns\_as\_victims.htm]

At first, individual reporters from *Catholic News* and *ABC News* published these findings in articles, but they were soon removed, and I was unable to find them. However, I did go to Internet Archive's "Wayback Machine," which documents old internet sites, even if they get taken down, and indeed these sources did report on these things, even *Courier-Mail* and the *Seattle Times* published the findings, but again, they were later removed.

(See *Catholic News*, "Nuns As Sexual Victims Get Little Notice," Internet Archives Wayback Machine, retrieved July 20, 2018, [web.archive.org/web/20030120055743/http://www.cathnews.com/news/301/20.php])

The aforementioned former nun Mary Pakiz goes on to testify that when she was in the convent, there was a warning by the head mistress about the potential sexual abuse that could take place if any of the women were alone with a priest: *"There was a warning, and I'm very thankful that our novice mistress was honest enough to tell us that we had to be very careful. [During the year] when we were more or less cloistered, she told us that pretty soon we would be exchanging our white veil for the black veil, and we would be going out into the community, and she said, 'There's one thing I want all of you to remember. And that thing is: You must travel in pairs, and you must never go to a priest's rectory [house for priests] by yourself. If you do, he going to ask you to—or, he is going to take you to bed with him.' I was very thankful that she had told us that, and she also mentioned the two parishes [place where priest has administrative authority] where we had to be very careful, and I was familiar with those two parishes, and I just couldn't comprehend how these older men would be preying upon young women who were aspiring to be nuns. I feel very strongly about this. I feel that those priests took away something that they had no right to take away. They took away the virginity of young women. Now these women, who were espousing to be mystically united with Christ, were also supposed to be virgins; that they gave up their—you might say marriage rights—to serve Christ. The priest then, in taking them to bed with him, violated their virginity. He had absolutely no right to do that. To think that someone from the [Catholic] church would violate these young women. Now some of these young women did not stay in the convent; they moved on and left the convent and got married, and the husband got damaged merchandise, merchandise that had been damaged by a priest, maybe even the priest that married the two. I feel that this is something which has to be addressed. I think we've touched only the tip of the iceberg in regard to the sexual abuse which is in the convent. A lot of the sexual abuse committed by priests has come out, but there still is much more to come out. I think that even though the novice mistress told us to be careful about these certain priests she knew that this existed. My question is: Why then? If the [Catholic] church knew these men were doing this, why did they allow these young women to be put into harm's way?"*

-Mary Pakiz, "Former Roman Catholic 'Bride of Christ' Nun Testifies of Abnormal Life in the Convent," CAnswersTV, Oct 22, 2011, retrieved July 19, 2018, [youtu.be/ZDAT\_BgtnBc?t=20m20s]

Of course, we Christians (and most of our American society) would automatically believe that it was wrong for a priest to forcefully take the virginity of a nun, as it is wrong for a man to rape a woman. We take this to be common knowledge. The reason she was so adamant to emphasize the point that *"He had absolutely no right to do that,"* is because there are many priests who believe that they do have the religious right to take the virginity of nuns, and I will go over the reasons for that later in the chapter.

Pakiz goes on to testify that when the head mistress warned these young ladies of what the priests may attempt to do to them sexually, cautioning them that they could be raped, the girls just giggled because *"they thought that this was silly."* They trusted in what they had been told about priests, trusting in the outward appearance of the priests, rather than heeding the warning, and that, eventually, from a statistical standpoint, most of them fell prey to the sexual abuse they once laughed at.

Let's continue to read Pakiz's testimony because even though she heeded the warning of her superior and put up a wall of protection to guard herself against the men, she was not warned and prepared to guard herself against the sexual abuse from the other women:

*"I even experienced a lesbian sister trying to seduce me, which I found to be extremely repulsive. It was such that she was a sister superior, and she was built like a gorilla, so there wasn't too much chance to escape her clutches, but it turned out that one day she had me in her office, and she was trying to seduce me through her conversation, and I resisted her, and then finally, someone knocked at the door and I was able to escape down the hall. Then, shortly after that, she decided to take away the keys to our rooms. There were four of us young sisters, and she took away the keys, so we could not lock our rooms at night. I remember waking up one night, and finding this figure clad in a white night gown on the end of my bed talking to me, and using seductive language. I froze. I really had difficulty—I just didn't know what was going to happen, but nothing did happen. But then she returned, night after night, hoping to be able to seduce me through conversation. Consequently, because she would not return my key, I began to develop chest pains, and I'm sure they were a result of anxiety. This anxiety was mimicking a heart attack, so I had to go to the hospital, and the convent doctor was very knowledgeable, and he recognized that there was something really troubling me. When I told him about this, I said that I had asked the sister superior if I could go to the Mother House, I wanted to talk to the Reverend Mother. I wanted to leave the convent, and the sister superior, the one who would come into the bedroom at night, refused. She said, 'No, you may not go and see the Reverend Mother, I forbid it.' So I mentioned this to the doctor, and the doctor said, 'Don't worry, I'm going to find a way for you to escape. I'm going to find friends who are going to supply the getaway car. I'm also going to provide you with a very small suitcase; pack just a few things that would take care of you maybe for an overnight stay at a villa.' I don't know how exactly the escape plan was done. All I know is one day, somehow, the sister superior*

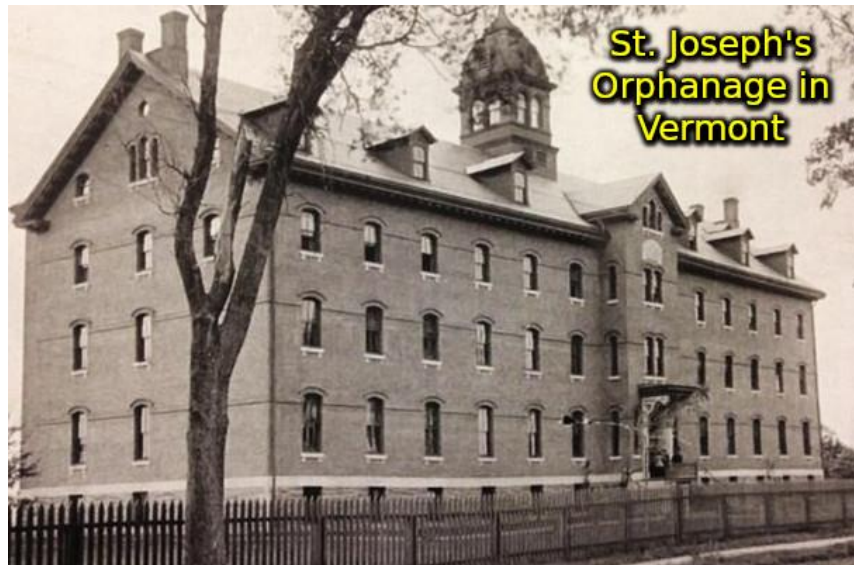
*was not at the convent, and someone came to tell me that there was somebody waiting outside of the convent for me, and I went, and I was able to get to the Mother House."*

-Mary Pakiz, "Former Roman Catholic 'Bride of Christ' Nun Testifies of Abnormal Life in the Convent," CAnswersTV, Oct 22, 2011, retrieved July 19, 2018, [youtu.be/ZDAT\_BgtnBc?t=25m30s]

There may be some readers who were not prepared to hear these things because they believe that women do not, or cannot, commit rape. In fact, women are statistically guilty of sexual abuse in *MORE* cases than men, but men are treated far worse for the same crimes, and if you want to learn more about that, I recommend my book, *Feminism: Castrating America*, which is free-to-read here at creationliberty.com.

Over the course of time, Pakiz managed to get away from nunnery altogether, but soon after leaving the convent, she told this story to a local priest, who in turn went to her convent and contacted the Reverend Mother about it. The Reverend Mother then contacted Pakiz and threatened her, saying, "*You are to tell NO ONE about what happened to you in the convent, OR ELSE!*" Pakiz did keep quiet about this for a time out of fear, but as some news articles began to come out with those studies about the frequency of sexual abuse among the convents, she thought it was time to come out with her own testimony to help any other women who may be trapped with no escape.

However, we need to look at a much darker side of the nuns and the institutions they oversee because women without the Spirit of God in them, who at the same time believe they are "holy," is a recipe for disaster. For example, St. Joseph's Orphanage in Burlington, Vermont was one of many orphanages to be investigated for charges of child abuse.



In 1940, two-year-old Sally Dale came to St. Joseph's, and she lived there for the next 21 years, but some of her memories were repressed about her time there. It was not until the 1990s that she was able to testify under oath (which means that, if she was caught lying, she could go to prison and suffer heavy fines) that she witnessed the murder of at least two children during her time living at St. Joseph's.

*"Dale said that around 1944, when she was about six, she was in the courtyard of the orphanage when she heard a crash of breaking glass, and saw a young boy sailing out of a window, with a nun leaning out and her arms outstretched. 'And he kind of hit and - I guess you'd call it, it was a bounce,' Dale recalled. 'And then he laid still.' She recalled that the nun she was walking with simply grabbed her ear and led her away, warning her that she'd just imagined what she'd seen. On another occasion, Dale says she saw a nun throw a boy into the nearby lake from a rowboat - a method many other former residents recalled being used to teach them to swim. When the boy disappeared beneath the waves, Dale asked a nun if he had died. 'She said, 'Oh don't worry, he's gone home for good', ' Dale recalled in the deposition. Dale, who is now dead, was one of about 100 former residents of St. Joseph's who filed suits against the Church in the 1990s, several years before the Boston Globe's landmark investigation cracked the veil of secrecy surrounding child abuse in the institution."*

-Keith Griffith, "'We saw nuns kill children': Horror claims about torture, sexual abuse and MURDER in Catholic orphanage in Vermont surface decades on," *DailyMail*, Aug 27, 2018, retrieved Feb 5, 2021, [http://dailym.ai/3pWzUP6]

Of course, the Catholic Church does what it does best: They lie and claim it never happened, despite the fact that about 100 people who grew up there testified of seeing the same horrific things. These people testified under oath that they witnessed the torture and murder of children, and even suffocating new-born babies:

*"In the course of the litigation, another chilling allegation of child murder came from former St. Joseph's resident Sherry Huestis. Huestis recalled that sometimes, in the middle of the night, a kindly seamstress who worked at the orphanage, Eva, would pull her out of bed to keep her company as she made rounds checking the doors. One night, said Huestis, they heard terrible screams, and rushed toward the source, where they found two nuns hovering over another nun lying on the bed with her legs spread, and a black baby emerging from between them. The following day, the baby was in the nursery, where Huestis helped take care of younger children, when a nun came in, picked up a satin pillow, and put it over the baby's face, she said. The baby flailed and then went limp. After Huestis told the orphanage's social worker what she had seen, the nursery nun slapped her across the face. Joseph Eskra, who spent time at St. Joseph's in the 1950s and early 1960s, recalled another boy who failed to turn up at dinner one night. A search party set out with flashlights to look for him, and found him near the swing set, tied to a tree, frozen to death. Other stories included horrible beatings, cruel punishments including being locked inside small compartments and burned with matches, and sexual abuse by nuns."*

-Keith Griffith, "'We saw nuns kill children': Horror claims about torture, sexual abuse and MURDER in Catholic orphanage in Vermont surface decades on," *DailyMail*, Aug 27, 2018, retrieved Feb 5, 2021, [http://dailym.ai/3pWzUP6]

The amount of these types of orphanages, run by nuns, is not uncommon. Please do not misunderstand; I am not saying that every Catholic-run institution operates in this manner, but there have been an overwhelming number of them being exposed over the past 30 years (i.e. since the 1990s). Worse still, many of the witnesses accepted settlements from the Catholic Church for as little as \$5,000 because they did not believe that anyone would believe their testimonies in court because it was so long ago.

In a more recent lawsuit, German nuns were prosecuted for selling children for sex:

*"A jarring report outlining decades of rampant child sex abuse at the hands of greedy nuns and perverted priests paints a troubling picture of systematic abuse in the German church. The report is the byproduct of a lawsuit alleging that orphaned boys living in the boarding houses of the Order of the Sisters of the Divine Redeemer were sold or loaned for weeks at a time to predatory priests and businessmen in a sick rape trade. The men involved in the lawsuit say as boys they were denied being adopted out or sent to foster families because selling them for rape lined the sisters' coffers for their 'convent of horrors.' Some of the boys were then groomed to be sex slaves to perverts, the report claims."*

-Barbie L. Nadeau, "German Nuns Sold Orphaned Children to Sexual Predators," *Daily Beast*, Feb 2, 2021, retrieved Feb 18, 2021, [http://bit.ly/3au1dLo]

The "Order of the Sisters of Divine Redeemer" made a lot of money selling sex from 175 (80% boys, 20% girls), ages 8 to 14, refusing to put them up for adoption so they could be used as underage prostitutes:

*"According to the men involved in the lawsuit, as boys, they were not put for adoption or sent to foster care because selling them to sick rape trade filled the sisters' coffers with their 'convent of horrors.' The report claims that 175 people majority of whom were boys from the ages of 8 to 14, were abused for more than two decades. Still, it failed to blame the nuns directly, instead of says it was 'systematic' management errors and 'leniency' enabling the abuse to continue. The report also finds that some boys were even groomed to be sex slaves to perverts. The lawsuit also surveyed religious orders and found that 1,412 people who lived in or frequented convents, parishes, and monasteries as children, teenagers, and ward were also abused by at least 654 monks and nuns and other members of the orders. Around 80 per cent of the victims were male, and 20 per cent female. The survey also found that 80 per cent of the abusers are now dead, and 37 had left the priesthood or religious order."*

-Shayaree Chanda, "Report Exposes Decades of Sexual Trade Carried Out by German Nuns," *Headlines of Today*, Feb 3, 2021, retrieved Feb 18, 2021, [http://bit.ly/3u3RCmi]

I find it laughable that they "*failed to blame the nuns directly.*" Are we to believe that the nuns, who live in the orphanage, oversee its daily operations, and are the temporary parental caretakers of the children, had no idea that they were being raped for money on a nightly basis?

At the time I was writing on this story (in February of 2021), the lawsuit was ongoing, which means that journalists who wanted to see the report had to sign confidentiality contracts, agreeing not to publish the contents of the report, and therefore, as you read this book, there may be more information currently available on the case. One of the plaintiffs called it "*scandalous*," knowing that the order to keep journalists quiet was to protect the Catholic Church from blowback.

However, journalists were allowed to publish general statements about the report. Many details could be given about their findings, but to demonstrate the depth of the criminal activity, one of the men involved in the lawsuit stated that, after leaving the convent, the nuns would often visit his college dorm, drug him, and deliver him to the apartment of one their customers who favored him.

*"The young boys faced worst abuse where they were forced into participating in gang bangs and orgies then after returning to the convent the nuns would punish them for wrinkling their clothes or for getting covered in semen all over. The archdiocese now led by bishop Karl-Heinz Wiesmann said that the investigation report was 'so gory' that it would be too shocking to make it public. Wiesemann told the Catholic News Agency KNA that he had to take a month's sabbatical to recover after reading it. The report's primary abusers are now dead. Many of the victims have settled for financial compensation from the church, so they did not join the lawsuit. In March, the archdiocese is planning to publish a new revised, undoubtedly heavily redacted edition of the report."*

-Shayaree Chanda, "Report Exposes Decades of Sexual Trade Carried Out by German Nuns," *Headlines of Today*, Feb 3, 2021, retrieved Feb 18, 2021, [<http://bit.ly/3u3RCmi>]

Again, if you are reading this by March of 2021, you could look up details on the report if you are curious. The reason victims do not fully go after the Catholic Church is because it takes a lot of time and money to do so, not to mention a lot of embarrassing and shameful information that would get released to the public, so the Catholic Church knows they can throw a few pennies at the victims and skate by without being held fully responsible.

*And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them. For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret. But all things that are reprov'd are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest is light. Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.*

*-Ephesians 5:11-14*

What information could have been "so gory" that a Catholic bishop could not handle it? What really goes on behind the closed doors of these institutions? There have been survivor testimonies about what goes on in these convents, but sadly, most people, especially members of Catholic church buildings, refuse to believe they are true, and yet, the first thing the Catholic bishop does when seeing the evidence of vile corruption in his organization is take a month-long vacation.

So far, we have heard about open convents, where nuns and visitors are somewhat connected to the outside world, but Charlotte Eckler's testimony goes much deeper because she entered into a *CLOSED* convent, otherwise known as a "cloister," and miraculously escaped. As a young girl growing up in Kansas, Charlotte was convinced she would be doing God's will by becoming a nun and joining a convent. Little did she and her family know the horrors that would await her once she signed her life over to the Catholic Church.

(NOTE: Numerous websites say her last name is "Keckler," but the book of her testimony says her last name was "Eckler." It appears that both spellings are German in origin, which means they both may be correct. I am unable to determine which is most accurate, so I will use the spelling that she used in her testimony.)

Charlotte traveled with her parents to a boarding school in which nuns are trained in particular skills. Charlotte chose to become a nurse, and while she attended the school, she was convinced to join a "Cloister," which is a private, closed institution of nuns, in which they have no contact with the outside world, nor do they receive any visitors; she was convinced by a priest that nurses were needed in the Cloisters.

This is an excerpt from Charlotte's testimony:

*"After finishing my nurse's training and my schooling, I decided to take my Black Veil and become a Cloistered Nun... Indeed, I attended my own funeral. A crude casket made of rough boards, by the hands of the little Nuns, was placed at the altar in the chapel. During the ceremony, I stepped into the open faced casket and was covered with a heavy drape mortel. [i.e. a black pall/cloth spread over caskets at funerals] For nine hours I lay in that casket for the purpose of dying out to the world, affections and lusts — trying to forget mother, father, brothers, sisters, home and its memories... At the end of the ceremony, I stepped out of the casket, walked to the rear of the altar into a small room. There before the priests — the Bishop and the Mother Superior of the Convent — I took my final vows of Poverty, Chastity [refraining from sexual intercourse] and Obedience. I signed them in blood taken from the lobe of my ear."*

-Charlotte Eckler, *From Convent to Pentecost: My Escape From The Cloistered Convent*, Rose of Sharon Books, 1999, p. 9-10, ISBN: 0-9684692-0-5



We can already see the unbiblical practices of this wicked convent because Jesus told us not to swear such oaths or vows.

*Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear [*falsely swear*] thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.*  
*-Matthew 5:33-37*

A righteous man will give his word (i.e. his "yes" or "no") and then keep it, without having to say "*I swear I will do this*" or "*I promise I will do that.*" It is the wicked man who is required to swear oaths and sign contracts because his lying tongue is so froward (i.e. rebellious and ungovernable), he cannot be trusted.

(Read "[God Does Not Justify Lies](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Baptism is the ceremony we use to show that we were dead, but now we are washed clean by the regenerating blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. These other ceremonies of lying in a coffin for many hours in bridal gowns is all from the wicked traditions of men, and there is nothing close to that commanded in Scripture.

(Read "[The Biblical Understanding of Baptism](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Furthermore, this shows us that the Catholic Church is taking the reference of the bride of Christ, which is meant for the church as a whole, and turning it into a sexual matter. In Catholic convents, it is only women that go through this process to become a "bride of Christ," and they use the phrase quite literally, which means they are turning what is meant as a metaphor for how the church should act and operate into a sexual matter meant only for females, thereby perverting the Gospel.

In addition to this, Charlotte testified that she was made to swear complete slavery to the Catholic bishop and "Reverend Mother" that oversaw the convent. This means she was to be seen and not heard. She was to see nothing, hear nothing, and speak nothing; her entire existence would now be like a robot, to only do as she was commanded no matter what it was, and sadly, knowing what we already know about the sadistic nature of the Catholic Church, some of you may see what is coming next.

(You may have noticed that I have refer to a "Reverend Mother" as the "head mistress" because writing out the title of "Reverend" for men or women makes me sick to my stomach, since "reverend" is reserved only for God in Scripture - [Psa 111:9](#); Read "[Titles Are Unbiblical in the Church](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Charlotte continues in her testimony that the head mistress told her that she would have to suffer *ALL* the sufferings of Christ. Charlotte lists out everything she was told she was going to have to endure:

In the Garden of Olives I shed...	62,200 tears
In the Garden of Olives I shed...	97,300 drops of blood
On my body I received...	667 strokes
On my cheeks...	110 strokes
On my neck...	107 strokes
On my back...	380 strokes
On my breast...	77 strokes
On my head...	108 strokes
On my side...	38 strokes

On my shoulders...	62 strokes
On my arms...	44 strokes
On my feet...	32 strokes
On my mouth...	30 strokes
They spat in my face...	32 times
They pushed at my feet...	370 times
They have thrown me down to the ground...	38 times
They pulled me by the beard...	many times
By the crown of thorns I received...	100 wounds
I have pleaded for your salvation...	900 times
For your conversion...	162 times
I was in agony...	19 times
I carried the cross of Calvary...	320 steps

-Charlotte Eckler, *From Convent to Pentecost: My Escape From The Cloistered Convent*, Rose of Sharon Books, 1999, p. 11, ISBN: 0-9684692-0-5

Of course, none of this really makes sense; for example, how is salvation set apart from conversion? Those two things cannot be separated; you cannot have one without the other, and so it makes no sense to say that there is a plead for salvation, and then also for conversion.

Furthermore, women do not have beards, so how is she supposed to have her beard pulled? Also, if Christ supposedly suffered all these wounds, why does it say that He was only in agony 19 times? Again, none of this makes sense, but more importantly, none of it is found in Scripture, and so if you are wondering where Catholics are getting these numbers from, it is simply the sadistic traditions of Catholicism; nothing more.

Charlotte continues:

*"The next morning I received my first penance. [self-punishment] Mother Superior took me to the penance chamber. It was rather barren, with the exception of some devices of torture. Then Mother Superior, with the aid of two Nuns, stripped me to the waist and draped me over a huge wooden cross. Then as Mother Superior watched, the two Nuns whipped me with the flagellation whip, which consisted of six large leather straps with a sharp piece of metal attached to each end, protruding from the base of a round stick approximately eighteen inches long. I was not washed or medically treated after this penance. The blood soaked into my clothes and dried in the wounds, making the wounds all the more painful as I continued work until evening. I was in such a bloody mess when I entered my cell to sleep that I could not remove the inner garments."*

-Charlotte Eckler, *From Convent to Pentecost: My Escape From The Cloistered Convent*, Rose of Sharon Books, 1999, p. 12, ISBN: 0-9684692-0-5

Although this will anger and upset most readers, we have to keep in mind that this is rather mild so far compared to what is coming, and it is also rather mild compared to the torture that was done openly during the Inquisition, which we covered in chapter eight. If you have read the entirety of this book up to this point, then all I can say is: This is what the Catholic Church looks like when you strip away the pretense and ceremonies.

For this next part of Charlotte's testimony, we need to keep in mind that the priests of the Catholic Church also hold the title of "vicar," like when the Pope is called the "Vicar of Christ." If you remember earlier in this chapter, I mentioned that Mary Pakiz was emphasizing the fact that the priests "*had absolutely no right*" to take away the virginity of the nuns, and

that is because the position of the priests is like that of a deputy, which is the general meaning of the word 'vicar', given all the same power and authority as Christ Himself, and therefore, you should be able to deduce what is coming next, knowing that the Catholic Church believes the vicar is Christ and the nuns are the brides of Christ.

Immediately after finishing all her vows, Charlotte testified of the following:

"Then a priest walked over to my side, locked his arm through mine, and told me that we were going to the Bridal Chamber. In horror I broke the hold and unhesitatingly told him, 'Never!'... At that moment the Mother Superior came in and reminded me of my obligation as the Bride of Christ. I was told that the Priest represented Christ and that his body was sanctified and holy, therefore, whatever he did was not sin... Ask any priest why so many cloistered convents have either the high stone wall with broken glass and spikes cemented at the top and a huge gate that's always locked, or a high fence with barbed wire slanting in at the top like prisons. He will no doubt answer, 'To keep the world out.' But I'll give you another answer. 'It's not to keep the world out, but to keep the Nuns in.'"

-Charlotte Eckler, *From Convent to Pentecost: My Escape From The Cloistered Convent*, Rose of Sharon Books, 1999, p. 15-16, ISBN: 0-9684692-0-5

As we have already seen, even in the open convents, sexual abuse and exploitation is not uncommon. These extortioners take advantage of their positions over these young girls, and rape them.

Charlotte's diet, along with all the other nuns, was only a piece of bread and small cup of black coffee in the morning, and in the evening, they would have a few cooked vegetables in water (which they called "soup"). These young girls were tortured, and then afterwards, put to work from dawn until dusk, cleaning every inch of the cloister on a less-than-sufficient diet, and much of their duties included cooking for the priests (while the little nuns were starving), and doing the priests' laundry, occasionally requiring the little nuns to do penance while doing that laundry, which consisted of licking the soapy, dirty laundry water with their tongues in the shape of a cross.

The nun's outfit is rather difficult to put on, but according to Charlotte's testimony, these girls had five minutes to dress and be lined up in the main hall. One day, Charlotte did not have time to put on one of her shoes, and as punishment, she was locked in a solitary confinement cell, dark and small with a dirt floor, for three days and nights without food.

All the young nuns were not to be friends with one another because of the constant threat of intense torture; they were trained very early on to lie and/or tattle on one another if any nun put one toe out of line. There are no friends in these cloisters. There are no allies. The nuns did not look out for one another; Charlotte learned quickly to trust no one because if she did, she would soon be dead, or worse.

"We were brought there to be the Brides of Christ, but we found ourselves turned into fornicators with the priests, thieves for stealing food, murderers for having hearts filled with hatred and vengeance, liars and tattlers. Every Nun spied on the other. You dared not trust one soul in the convent. The Nun's only hope was Hell here, and Hell hereafter."

-Charlotte Eckler, *From Convent to Pentecost: My Escape From The Cloistered Convent*, Rose of Sharon Books, 1999, p. 19, ISBN: 0-9684692-0-5

Eckler died in 1983, working as an evangelist to Catholics, and especially nuns, for which she had a heart of great compassion. Her escape was quite miraculous, and very painful, being that she was on the run for two days, as a starving young girl, with nowhere to go in a strange place, no food or water, a compound fracture in her arm, and hiding constantly out of fear that the Catholic Church might find her and take her back. Eckler requested that her documented story not be released in book form until after she died, so no one would ever say that she was using her testimony as a way to make money; she wanted all these little nuns to be born again in the faith of Christ and released from their prisons.

After reading all this, it may confuse some people how the Catholic Church can get so many people on board with the convents and nuns, and how they can convince so many people that it is good. It is through lies and tradition that they are able to fool the people, through their use of the word 'mystical', and I believe the aforementioned Mary Pakiz put it best: "I found that the term 'mystical' has been something that the Catholic Church employs each time they want to get the people to believe something without understanding it. They will tell the people that you really and truly don't have to understand this, it just is accepted. So 'mystical' covers a great deal of deceit."

-Mary Pakiz, "Former Roman Catholic 'Bride of Christ' Nun Testifies of Abnormal Life in the Convent," CAnswersTV, Oct 22, 2011, retrieved July 19, 2018, [youtube.com/watch?v=ZDAT\_BgtnBc]

How does torture help people in purgatory? Do not overthink it, it is just "mystical." Why are nuns pressured or required to have sex with priests? Do not overthink it, it is just "mystical." Why does the Catholic Church cling to these nonsensical traditions? Do not overthink it, it is just "mystical." That is always the excuse for arguments and questions which they cannot answer. As I have already stated, Catholicism is a pagan mystic religion like any other; the only difference is that, through the Devil's blessings, they have a lot more money and power, and through that money and power, their leaders abuse women and children without fear of reprisal.

## — #10 – Priests and Sexual Abuse —

The concept of Catholic priests making sexual advances on children has become so common over the past 30 years, it has practically become a running joke among many Americans. I have read discussions in which someone would make a comment about touching a child inappropriately, and the other person responds, "*Do I look like a Catholic priest to you?*" I want to make it abundantly clear that this is no laughing matter, but the theme has become so well-understood to many people in various countries around the world, the knowledge that rape and molestation is happening in the Catholic Church is just generally accepted among many citizens, and sadly, not a whole lot of people are doing anything about it yet because the money, power, and influence of the Catholic Church is so great, and because Catholics are so blinded by religious practices, they are willingly overlooking what is going on around them.

In the last chapter, I quoted from 1 Timothy 4 to emphasize the unbiblical mandate the Catholic Church puts on their priests, namely that they are forbidden to marry a woman. Let's read it one more time:

*Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.*

-1 Timothy 4:1-3

This prevention of marriage was designed by God so that men would not be alone ([Gen 2:18](#)), but the rejection of that important design is leading priests into fulfilling their sexual lusts in the only way they have available to them. Please do not misunderstand; I am not justifying what they are doing, but simply pointing out a major source of the problem. The lust of their flesh ends up erupting like a fire because they are continually prevented from having concord with a wife in the Biblical bonds of marriage, and thus, when their lust overflows, they not only take advantage of nuns, both children and adults, but they also molest and sodomize young boys.

Gerald Fitzgerald, a bishop of the Catholic Church, and founder of the *Servants of the Paraclete* (a Catholic order with the specific purpose of treating pedophile priests), wrote a letter in 1957 to bishops with a warning about sex offenders in Catholic leadership:

*"We are amazed to find how often a man, who would be behind bars if he were not a priest, is entrusted with the cura animarum [care of souls]."*

-Gerald Fitzgerald, quoted by Alan Cooperman, "One Diocese's Early Warning On Sex Abuse," *Washington Post*, Apr 22, 2003, retrieved Aug 7, 2018, [<https://wapo.st/2AVkoOm>]; See also Laurie Goodstein, "Early Alarm for Church on Abusers in the Clergy," *New York Times*, Apr 2, 2009, retrieved Aug 7, 2018, [[nytimes.com/2009/04/03/us/03church.html](http://nytimes.com/2009/04/03/us/03church.html)]

In other words, the Catholic Church protects criminals.

Of course, not all Catholic priests conduct themselves in that same offensive manner, and so we should not expect all priests would have been involved in such wicked sexual sins; however, the fact is that there is a large amount of such criminal activity that has taken place in the Catholic Church, and Catholic clergy have spent unfathomable amounts of money covering it up. As you will learn in this chapter, that fact is indisputable. What we are really going to focus on in this chapter is not only how much is going on, but how much the Papacy of the Catholic Church knows about it, how little they have done to stop it, how much effort they put in to protecting the criminals who abuse children, and how much money they have paid out to settle lawsuits for sexual abuse.

First, let's look at a few examples to give an idea of what is really going on. In 2016, the Canadian Superior Court approved a \$30-million settlement for 150 sexual abuse victims in a school for the deaf operated by the Catholic Church; \$20-million was to be paid by the Clerics of St. Viateur, who operate under the Roman Catholic Church in Montreal, and there were a total of 28 Catholic priests convicted of sexual assault.

-CTV News Montreal, "\$30M settlement approved for survivors of abuse at school for the deaf," Feb 17, 2016, retrieved July 31, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2Ozv4VE]

In another case:

"The Archdiocese of St. Paul and Minneapolis says it has agreed to pay a \$210 million settlement to 450 victims of clergy sexual abuse, one of the largest payouts to date in the U.S. over the Catholic church's priest abuse scandal."

-Aamer Madhani, "Archdiocese paying \$210 million to 450 priest sex abuse victims: Catholic 'church let you down'," *USA Today*, May 31, 2018, retrieved July 31, 2018, [https://usat.ly/2LStK1C]

Typically, there would be a statute of limitations on such cases, in which a priest could not be prosecuted after a certain amount of time, but Minnesota Legislature approved a three-year window to lift the statute of limitations, so that all prior sexual abuse victims could come forward to prosecute the Catholic Church for the sexual crimes of their priests. Soon after the statute of limitations was lifted, hundreds of claims were filed against the Catholic Church, to the point that the archdiocese (district for the Catholic Church under one archbishop) filed for bankruptcy, and according to the article, as of May 2018, 18 dioceses have filed for bankruptcy in Minnesota alone.

As I was doing research for this chapter in August of 2018, I decided to look up local news to see what I could find, and sure enough, the Shelby County News, the county where I live in Indiana, reported a police investigation into child sex abuse by a local priest:

"The Archdiocese of Indianapolis released information about a priest that has been suspended amid charges of child sex abuse. The priest, at one time, served in Shelbyville. Fr. John Maung, a priest for the Archdiocese of Indianapolis, has been suspended after an individual made a report to the Archdiocese that they were abused as a child several decades ago by Fr. Maung... The St. Joseph Catholic Church website says Fr. Maung was in Shelbyville from 1986-1998."

-J. McCrory, "Former Shelbyville Priest Investigated for Child Sex Abuse Charges; Fr. Maung Denies Claim," *Shelby County News*, Aug 30, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2wNmGtC]

*Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness [i.e. unable to control sexual lusts], Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.*

*-Galatians 5:19-21*

Similar reports have been flooding in all over the world over the past couple of decades. Here is another from the eastern United States:

"The Rev. Paul R. Shanley, who is accused of molesting at least 26 boys while he was a priest in the Boston Archdiocese, was arrested today in San Diego and charged with three counts of child rape... Since the clergy sexual abuse scandal erupted in Boston in January, prosecutors here and around the country have been frustrated that many of the accusations against priests could not be prosecuted because the acts happened too long ago, many of them in the 1960's or 1970's, and fell outside statutes of limitations."

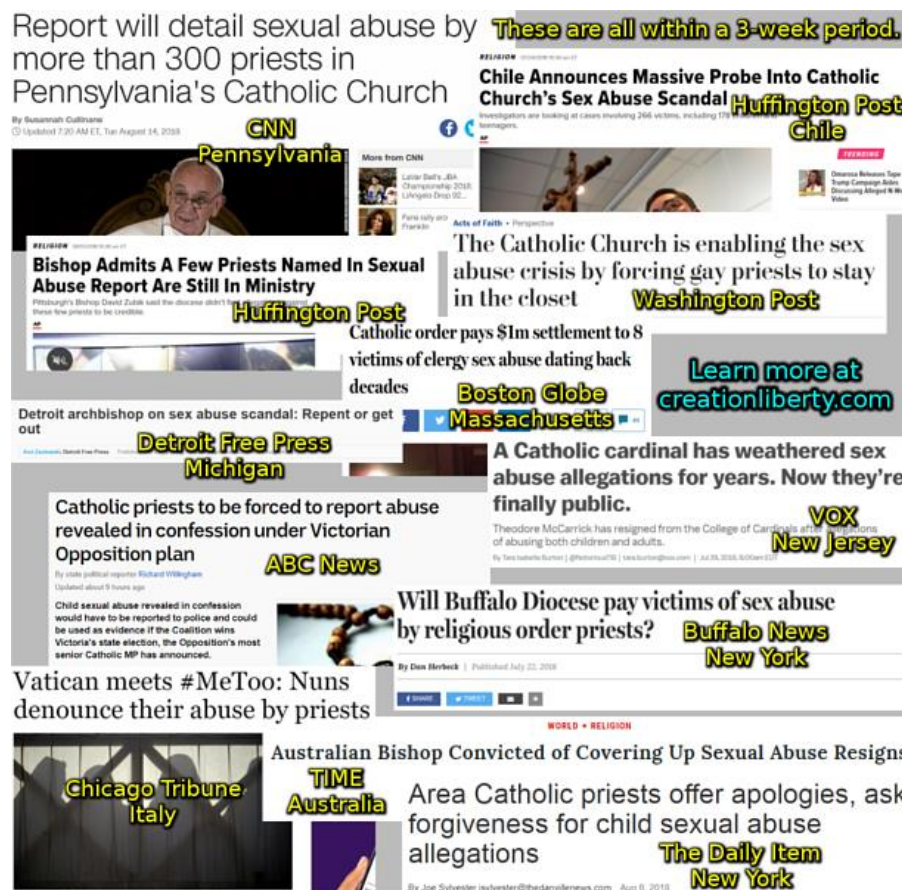
-Pam Belluck, "SCANDALS IN THE CHURCH: THE SHANLEY CASE; Boston Priest Is Arrested On Charges of Child Rape," *New York Times*, May 3, 2002, retrieved Aug 7, 2018, [https://nyti.ms/2AQaCgN]

The article said there was a "scandal in Boston in January" of 2002, and the following article covers more detail on that: "Yesterday, the Globe reported that Cardinal Bernard F. Law, during his first year in Boston in 1984, assigned [Rev. John J.] Geoghan to St. Julia's in Weston even though Geoghan had been removed from his two prior parishes for molesting children. In one of those cases, in 1980, Geoghan asserted that his repeated abuse of seven boys in one family, which was discovered that year, was not a 'serious' problem. That is according to a church timeline of Geoghan's career - six parish assignments in 34 years with accusations that he molested more than 130 children."

-Sacha Pfeiffer, "Geoghan preferred preying on poorer children," *Boston Globe*, Jan 7, 2002, retrieved Aug 7, 2018, [archive.boston.com/globe/spotlight/abuse/print/010702\_geoghan.htm]

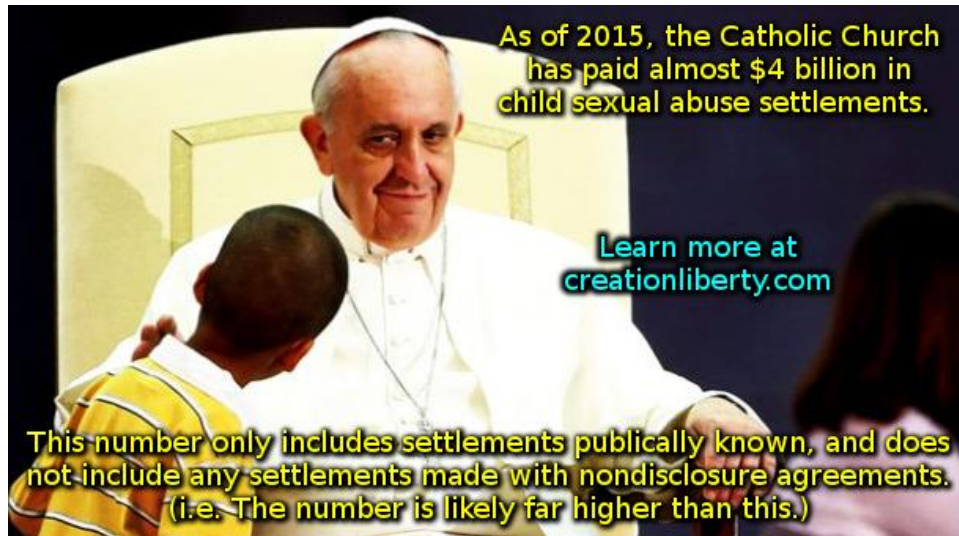
After seeing so many various cases, and not knowing exactly what to pick and choose to put in this chapter, I decided to type in "catholic priest sex abuse" into a news search engine just to give readers an idea of how much of this is going on. There is so much activity on the topic of Catholic priest sexual abuse every week, it is not possible that any one person is going to be able to document all of it.

The following are a just a few of the titles to the news articles I found just by doing a quick search. All the news articles in the image above were published within a three-week period, and these were only a fraction of what I found because the scandals are pouring out of newspapers and magazines constantly, all around the world, on a daily basis:



According to the *National Catholic Reporter*, the Catholic Church (as of Nov 2015) had paid out almost \$4 billion (i.e. 4,000 million dollars) in costs related to sexual abuse by priests. They also reported that these numbers are only based on those settlements which are part of public record, as many of the dioceses who are members of the U.S. Bishops' Conference did NOT make their financial reports public, even though they are required do so by law (via 501c3 contract, but no one is enforcing it), and on top of that, this number does not include those settlements which were reached with nondisclosure or confidentiality restrictions. (i.e. The number of \$4 billion is probably quite low, especially considering that this it was a back in 2015.)

(See Jack & Diane Ruhl, "NCR research: Costs of sex abuse crisis to US church underestimated," *National Catholic Reporter*, Nov 2, 2015, retrieved July 31, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2b61M3G]; Read "501c3: The Devil's Church" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)



Many of these sexual abuse cases require the state to temporarily lift the statute of limitations for special reasons, namely because children do not have the cognitive reasoning or understanding to know what is happening to them, and thus, they have no choice but to press charges when they are adults. (This is especially important for orphans, who have no parents to protect them.) The Catholic Church has taken great pains to try and convince their parishioners that these are isolated incidents or just media exaggeration.

In fact, according to interviews with news correspondents to Rome and the Vatican, the bishops and cardinals of the Catholic Church attempted to give the impression that sexual abuse was only taking place in the U.S. and Canada. They tried to shift the blame to a region to cover up the worldwide religious problem, and to protect the Vatican from being accused of (at the very least) ignoring child abuse.

Robert Mickens, a reporter for a Catholic newspaper said:

"One of the things Vatican officials have tried to do is portray this as 'American thing' or, at best, an 'Anglo-Saxon' thing. [i.e. Germanic inhabitants of England]"

-Robert Mickens, Rome Correspondent for the Tablet-Catholic Weekly, interviewed in *Mea Maxima Culpa: Silence in the House of God*, Home Box Office, retrieved Aug 7, 2018, [youtu.be/ckmZahKS-Zo?t=46m5s]

Vatican Correspondent for the *Daily Fact*, an Italian newspaper, said:

"[He imitates what the bishops and cardinals say:] 'Oh, the sex abuse scandals, they happen only in the United States, in Canada.' And suddenly, in the year 2010, the great scandal explodes in Europe. It explodes in Ireland, in Germany, in Austria, in Switzerland, in France, in Belgium."

-Marco Politi, Vatican Correspondent for Il Fatto Quotidiano, interviewed in *Mea Maxima Culpa: Silence in the House of God*, Home Box Office, retrieved Aug 7, 2018, [youtu.be/ckmZahKS-Zo?t=46m16s]

Obviously, such allegations are embarrassing, and I am sure no one will argue against that fact, but these "region specific" excuses are being used to cover up the massive offenses in these religious institutions because, today, it is being exposed in every major country around the world. However, one of the most absurd excuses used by the leadership in the Vatican is the tale that they "did not know" about the sexual abuse of children; in fact, the popes of the Catholic Church have known more about the sexual abuse than anyone else, and worse still, they sat on the information and did nothing because they were protecting themselves and their criminal colleagues.

In 2016, a German investigation led to prosecution of priests who had sexually abused young boys in a famous Catholic boys' choir in Bavaria. There were fifty cases of sexual abuse, and they further discovered that many more cases (beyond those fifty) involved physical abuse, everything "from beatings to food deprivation." (Note: This is very similar to the abuse of nuns.)

(See Alexander Stille, "What Pope Benedict Knew About Abuse in the Catholic Church," *The New Yorker*, Jan 14, 2016, retrieved Aug 7, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2vNS1vI])

This is where the investigation starts getting really interesting:

*"The news received widespread attention not only because of its disturbing content but because the director of the Regensburg boys' choir from 1964 to 1994 was Georg Ratzinger, the older brother of Joseph Ratzinger, who became Benedict XVI. Joseph Ratzinger was the Archbishop of Munich from 1977 until 1981, when he went to head up the powerful Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith [i.e. The Office of Inquisition], which establishes theological orthodoxy and was also one of the branches of the Church that dealt with priestly sexual abuse."*

-Alexander Stille, "What Pope Benedict Knew About Abuse in the Catholic Church," *The New Yorker*, Jan 14, 2016, retrieved Aug 7, 2018, [<https://bit.ly/2vNS1vI>]

In chapter eight, we covered the Inquisition, and I provided documentation to show that the Office of Inquisition was reopened under the name, "*Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith*." We also just read that this Office of Inquisition was in charge of sexual abuse cases in the Catholic Church. Are you putting all this together yet? The head office that handled child sexual abuse cases was overseen by the leader (i.e. Grand Inquisitor) of the newly reopened Office of Inquisition, which had, for hundreds of years, tortured, raped, and murdered countless men, women, and children, and that same man later became the Pope.

While heading up the *Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith*, Ratzinger (Benedict XVI) had all sexual abuse cases within the Catholic Church worldwide brought to his desk. He had all the data in their secret archives. He knew about the cases, and it was very likely he knew about his own brother's abuse of children in Germany, and just from that case alone, the conflict of interest is blaringly loud, it is almost deafening, but the general public seems to be completely lost in blissful ignorance. At the very least, it certainly it brings into question how Ratzinger became the Pope, and it does not take a criminal law degree and years of training to figure out what is happening here, namely, that Ratzinger was elected because of his work covering up the sins of his fellow priests, bishops, and cardinals who voted for him.

In countries like Ireland, many Catholics began to leave the Catholic Church, and would not come to Mass anymore because they were tired of the lies and contradictions in the numerous sex abuse lawsuits that were being charged against priests. There has been a lot of the anger due to the cover-up and lack of effort by priests and bishops to contact local police in response to child sexual abuse at the hands of their fellow priests and bishops, but if you are wondering why they are not reporting these offenses, there is an interesting reason for that.

Ratzinger, as Pope Benedict XVI, with all the knowledge he had about child sex abuse in Catholic parishes around the world, then decided to publish the "Pastoral Letter of the Holy Father Pope Benedict XVI to the Catholics of Ireland," which addresses the Irish bishops:

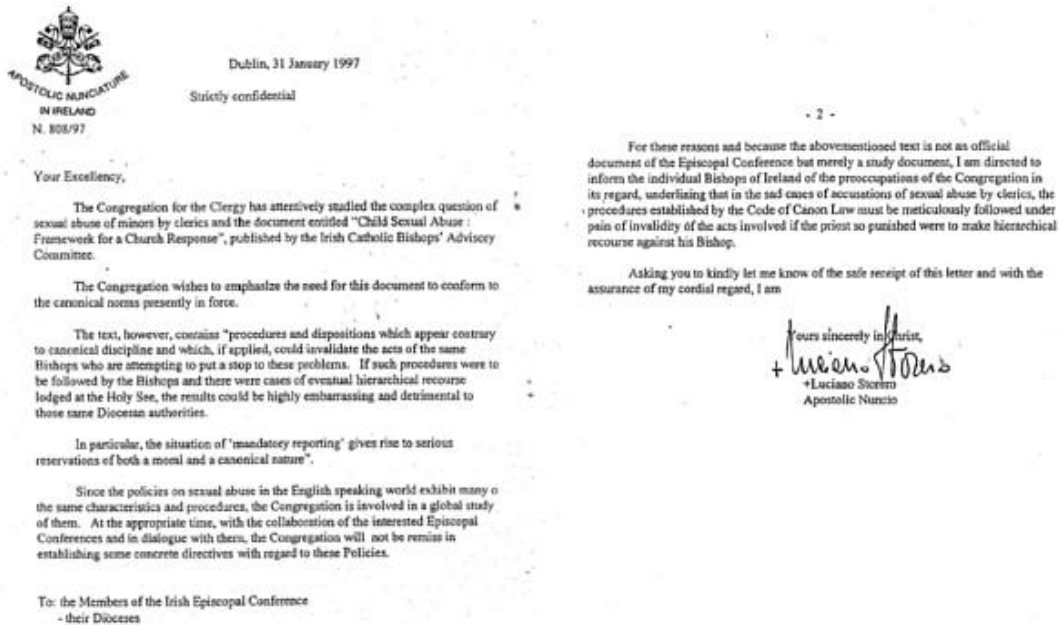
*"It cannot be denied that some of you and your predecessors failed, at times grievously, to apply the long-established norms of canon law to the crime of child abuse. Serious mistakes were made in responding to allegations. I recognize how difficult it was to grasp the extent and complexity of the problem, to obtain reliable information and to make the right decisions in the light of conflicting expert advice. Nevertheless, it must be admitted that grave errors of judgement were made and failures of leadership occurred. All this has seriously undermined your credibility and effectiveness. I appreciate the efforts you have made to remedy past mistakes and to guarantee that they do not happen again. Besides fully implementing the norms of canon law in addressing cases of child abuse, continue to cooperate with the civil authorities in their area of competence. Clearly, religious superiors should do likewise."*

-Pope Benedict XVI, "Pastoral Letter of the Holy Father Pope Benedict XVI to the Catholics of Ireland," Vatican Archives, retrieved Aug 7, 2018, [[w2.vatican.va/content/benedict-xvi/en/letters/2010/documents/hf\\_ben-xvi\\_let\\_20100319\\_church-ireland.html](http://w2.vatican.va/content/benedict-xvi/en/letters/2010/documents/hf_ben-xvi_let_20100319_church-ireland.html)]

On the surface, it appears that Ratzinger identified the problem and addressed it, namely, that priests and bishops were not doing their job, and that they should follow "*the long-established norms of canon law*" to work with local authorities to prosecute sex offenders among leadership in the Catholic Church. However, the problem is that this statement angered many priests and bishops because it was a shift of blame (which is quite common with the papacy, i.e. "blame someone else so we do not have to be held accountable"); Ratzinger had blamed the priests and bishops for not keeping Catholic Canon law concerning child abuse, but in fact, they *HAD* kept Catholic canon law by *NOT* reporting the abuse.



After the release of Ratzinger's publication, an anonymous source (obvious within Catholic clergy) released a confidential document from a Catholic Apostolic Nuncio (i.e. a diplomatic representative of the Holy See) to the media. Of course, these letters are not for the public to see, but it was released by an angry priest to show that bishops were instructed *NOT* to report child sexual abuse cases to the police, and that doing so would violate canon law:



"The Congregation for the Clergy has attentively studied the complex question of sexual abuse of minors by clerics and the document entitled 'Child Sexual Abuse: Framework for a Church Response', published by the Irish Catholic Bishops' Advisory Committee. The Congregation wishes to emphasize the need for this document to conform to the canonical norms [Vatican rules] presently in force. The text, however, contains 'procedures and dispositions which appear contrary to canonical discipline and which, if applied, could invalidate the acts of the same Bishops who are attempting to put a stop to these problems. If such procedures were to be followed [e.g. reporting an incident of rape or molestation to the police] by Bishops and there were cases of eventual hierarchical recourse lodged at the Holy See [i.e. a priest/bishop got caught in a sexual act and was hidden away by the Vatican], the results could be highly embarrassing and detrimental to those same Diocesan authorities. [i.e. They need to protect the pedophiles that make up the Vatican from embarrassing accusations.] In particular, the situation of 'mandatory reporting' gives rise to serious reservations of both a moral and a canonical nature [i.e. They do not believe that turning in pedophile priests to governing authorities is the right thing to do.]...

For these reasons and because the abovementioned text [Child Sexual Abuse: Framework for a Church Response] is not an official document of the Episcopal Conference but merely a study document, I am directed to inform the individual Bishops of Ireland of the preoccupations of the Congregation in its regard, underlining that in the sad cases of accusations of sexual abuse by clerics, the procedures established by the Code of Canon Law must be meticulously followed under pain of invalidity of the acts involved if the priest so punished were to make hierarchical recourse against his Bishop."

-Luciano Storero, "Apostolic Nunciature in Ireland N. 808/97," Jan 31, 1997; See above image to read the document.

Some readers may not have understood that since it is buried in many long sentences and complex words and phrases; however, in short, the Catholic diplomat is afraid of embarrassment to the Catholic Church, that people would lose faith in their priestly authority. The letter said "the sad cases of ACCUSATIONS of sexual abuse," and I have to confess that statement made me very angry because you will notice he did not say, "the sad cases of sexual abuse," meaning that he is emphasizing the horror of the accusation against the priesthood, rather than the horror of children being raped.

Therefore, the recommendations to contact local authorities in matters of child sexual abuse in the "Framework for a Church Response" document were said to be only labeled as "study material" and *NOT* instruction, which was stated to dissuade bishops and priests from contacting the police. Furthermore, the author told Irish bishops that they ought not to ever report these "sad cases" because not only would it break Catholic Canon Law, but the priests would also have their positions and wealth threatened by others in cases of wrongful accusation, which makes no sense because, if a priest did nothing wrong, then he has nothing to worry about; rather, they are worried about being discovered for their crimes.

## Ultimately, Vatican authorities care more about tradition and their own well-being than they care about abused children.

*Then said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come: but woe unto him, through whom they come! It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones.*

-Luke 17:1-2

Of course, the "little ones" being referred to in this chapter are the new Christians born again into Christ's church. (i.e. The children are a metaphor for new converts who are vulnerable in child-like humility.) However, the physical children are suffering under the vile "care" of the Catholic Church, and certainly, the Lord God is furious with this, and yet, God's wondrous patience and mercy is glorified, knowing that He sees all this, with every deed being kept in the record books, and He has been gracious enough to give these men every opportunity to come to godly sorrow of their wrongdoing.

*And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.*

*And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.*

-Revelation 20:12-15

*The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.*

-2 Peter 3:9

But that being said, the pedophile rings in the Catholic Church have grown out of their control. A French commission reported thousands of active pedophiles in Catholic clergy and members (i.e. who were protected by the Catholic Church in one form or another) since the 1950s:

*"The commission's research uncovered between 2,900 and 3,200 paedophile priests or other members of the church, said Jean-Marc Sauve, adding that it was 'a minimum estimate'. The commission's report is due to be released on Tuesday after two and a half years of research based on church, court and police archives, as well as interviews with witnesses. Sauve, senior French civil servant, said the report, which runs to 2,500 pages, had attempted to quantify both the number of offenders and the number of victims."*

-France24, "Thousands of paedophiles active in French Catholic Church since 1950, commission finds," Oct 3, 2021, retrieved Oct 4, 2021, [<https://www.france24.com/en/france/20211003-thousands-of-paedophiles-operated-in-french-catholic-church-since-1950-commission-finds>]

The commission concluded their investigation with a staggering 216,000 victims of sexual abuse in the Catholic Church since the 1950s, and they were all children, mostly boys. Keep in mind, this is *ONLY* in France, and these are *ONLY* those who they had reports on:

*"Some 216,000 children - mostly boys - have been sexually abused by clergy in the French Catholic Church since 1950, a damning new inquiry has found... The inquiry found the number of children abused in France could rise to 330,000, when taking into account abuses committed by lay members of the Church, such as teachers at Catholic schools."*

-BBC News, "French Church abuse: 216,000 children were victims of clergy - inquiry," Oct 5, 2021, retrieved Oct 5, 2021, [<https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-58801183>]

If someone is going to tell me that, after everything we have covered so far, that this is a "Christian" institution, then I would say that person is delusional and wicked of heart. And yet, I have seen and heard Catholics try to justify all this, clinging senseless with their hopes in false doctrines that lead to these abominations.

These are not isolated incidents with France or Ireland; this is a worldwide problem with the Catholic Church, and the hierarchy specifically, including the Papacy, that ignores and covers up sexual abuse allegations to save face. To understand this in more detail, let's take a closer look at Marcial (*mar-see-al*) Maciel (*mah-see-el*) Degollado, a famous (or infamous) Mexican Catholic priest and pedophile who was praised many times by Pope John Paul II for his well-known work in fund-raising for the Catholic Church.

In 1941, Maciel founded *The Legion of Christ* (sometimes called the *Legionaries of Christ*) and the *Regnum Christi Movement* (i.e. Kingdom of Christ Movement), who were a zealous group of fund-raisers for the Catholic Church. In the course of their existence, they have raised enormous amounts of money for the Catholic Church, and have started Catholic seminary colleges all around the world.



"After founding the Legion of Christ in Mexico in 1941, Maciel built a vast network of schools, colleges, seminaries and lucrative real estate holdings. At its peak the Legion had an annual budget of \$650 million, more than 650 priests and 60,000 followers in an affiliated lay group also founded by Maciel, Regnum Christi. Its pockets were so deep that Mexicans sometimes called the order the Millionarios de Cristo."

-Jason Berry, "Father Maciel Is Our Father, Say Two Mexican Men, And He Molested Us," *ABC News*, Mar 5, 2010, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [<https://abcn.ws/2M0x3oq>]

The Spanish phrase "*Millionarios de Cristo*" means "Millionaires of Christ," which was a nick name given to them for their extraordinary wealth.

*It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.*

-Mark 10:25

*But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.*

-1 Timothy 6:9-10

Please do not misunderstand, money itself is not evil, nor is wealth, otherwise, we would have to condemn Job and King David to hell. However, the obsession with gaining earthly wealth for one's own selfish purposes, to fulfill the lusts of the flesh, is what corrupts a man, and that is exactly what the Catholic Church has done since its inception in 325 A.D.

Maciel was able to become friends with many famous and wealthy people, who supported the Legion of Christ: "*Politically, he was closely linked with the far right in the US, mixing with Jeb Bush, brother of George W Bush, Rick Santorum, a former US senator [also U.S. presidential candidate], and Thomas Monaghan, the Domino's Pizza magnate [a wealthy and influential person - also the founder of Ave Maria University in Florida] who paid for the new cathedral in Nicaragua's capital, Managua, which replaced the one that was destroyed in the 1972 earthquake.*"

-Hugh O'Shaughnessy, "Pope acts against incest priest's group," *The Independent*, Aug 8, 2010, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [<https://ind.pn/2nnbDDt>]

Maciel also had ties and received funding from Steve McEveety, producer of Mel Gibson's *The Passion of the Christ*, Spanish opera singer Placido Domingo, and former CIA director William Casey. He was praised by Mary Ann Glendon, former U.S. ambassador to the Vatican, claiming that he had a "*radiant holiness*" and that he was key in "*advancing the New Evangelization.*" Author George Weigel, Founding President of the James Madison Foundation, said, "*If Father Maciel and his charism [spiritual gift] as a founder are to be judged by the fruits of this work, those fruits are most impressive indeed.*" Maciel's work has also been praised by CNN commentator William Bennett and CNN religion correspondent Delia Gallagher, so in short, Maciel has been praised worldwide as a shining trophy of the Catholic Church. (See Jason Berry, "Money paved way for Maciel's influence in the Vatican," *National Catholic Reporter*, Apr 6, 2010, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [[ncronline.org/news/accountability/money-paved-way-maciels-influence-vatican](http://ncronline.org/news/accountability/money-paved-way-maciels-influence-vatican)])

*Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.*

-Luke 6:26

It should be obvious why Maciel was not being investigated; his exposure would have been a grievous embarrassment for the Catholic Church, and a huge loss of funding for the Papacy. When any company has a person who is responsible for bringing in the big bucks, they will do everything they can to keep that employee on staff and working, and therefore, it should be no surprise that the Catholic Church covered for Maciel. During Maciel's time in the fund-raising spotlight, before the reopening of the Office of Inquisition under Ratzinger, any accusation of child sexual abuse should have been investigated by the *Congregation for Institutes of Consecrated Life and Societies of Apostolic Life*, but the head of that department, Cardinal Eduardo Martinez Somalo, received many cash gifts from Maciel, one eye witness testified he received \$90,000 cash in an envelope; thus, it should not take a genius detective to figure out why Somalo never investigated Maciel.

(See Jason Berry, "Legion of Christ's deception, unearthed in new documents, indicates wider cover-up," *National Catholic Reporter*, Feb 28, 2013, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2KD5ImP])

Pope John Paul II edified Maciel and his fund-raising army:

"During a 1993 speech in St. Peter's Square, *John Paul said, 'You are all sons and daughters of Father Maciel!' In 1994, he called Maciel 'an efficacious [effective] guide to youth.'* John Paul continued to praise him after the allegations were filed against Maciel at the Vatican's Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith — where they gathered dust for six years."

-Jason Berry, "Confidant cardinal tells new tales about Pope John Paul's role in scandal," *Public Radio International*, Nov 8, 2013, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2M1L9G4]

They just love to flatter each others' fine names with lavish compliments.

*Help, LORD; for the godly man ceaseth; for the faithful fail from among the children of men. They speak vanity every one with his neighbour: with flattering lips and with a double heart do they speak.*  
-Psalm 12:1-2

Indeed, John Paul II continued to praise Maciel, as we can see from an address he gave to Maciel's organization:

*"With special affection I greet your beloved founder, Fr [Father] Marcial Maciel, and extend to him my heartfelt congratulations on this important event, cordially thanking him for the words he addressed to me on everyone's behalf."*

-John Paul II, "Address of John Paul II to the Legionaries of Christ and the Members of the Regnum Christi Movement," Vatican Archives, Jan 4, 2001, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2LZYdMI]



Obviously, John Paul II did not want Maciel prosecuted either (which could be due to money and/or John Paul II was involved in the same sex crimes), even though it is now well-known public record that Maciel had raped and molested at least 20 of the young boys in the Legion of Christ seminary. Maciel was also taking morphine on a regular basis, and became an addict. In addition, Maciel would visit monasteries under his control every few days and insist on being sexually pleased by one of the boys.

(See Jason Berry, "Money paved way for Maciel's influence in the Vatican," *National Catholic Reporter*, Apr 6, 2010, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [ncronline.org/news/accountability/money-paved-way-maciels-influence-vatican])

Sadly, it does not end there because Maciel also began to target very wealthy Mexican widows, had children with them, and sexually abused his own children. Blanca Bonilla was one of the women targeted; Maciel gave her a fake identity, calling himself "Raul Rivas," claiming he was an international detective for oil companies, and although they did not marry, he elected to become the adopted father of her 3-year-old son, and when he was 7, Maciel attempted to rape him. There are many such examples of Maciel taking the children of his mistresses on trips to Europe, and molesting them during their travels.

-Christopher Simon, "Maciel Raped His Own Children Too," *The Atlantic*, Apr 13, 2010, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2ATJBjN]; See also Michael Sheridan, "Father Marcial Maciel, was my dad, and he sexually abused me, Raul Gonzalez claims in lawsuit," *New York Daily News*, Jun 22, 2018, retrieved Aug 14, 2018, [https://nydn.us/2OBuCFM]

Reporters started to gather information and publish these facts in 1997, and they attempted to contact the Vatican to get a response. There was no response.

Of course, dedicated Catholics will argue that perhaps John Paul II never received this information, which is beyond absurd because Maciel was the most highly revered fund-raiser for the Catholic Church at the time, in which the Pope was giving speeches complimenting Maciel for his work, and for this information to not have reached the Pope, who is surrounded by those who *DEFINITELY* had the information, is ridiculous. What is more ridiculous is a Catholic who would make that claim, because, assuming that the Catholic Church slipped on a banana peel and just happened to accidentally hire and cover up pedophiles in their highest levels of religious leadership, a Catholic would have to presuppose that the Catholic Church, likely the most wealthy and powerful institution in the known world, is blind, stupid, disorganized, and completely unconcerned about the welfare of children, and if that is the case, I would ask them: Why do you blindly follow, and give money to, such an incompetent organization?

This gets stranger as it goes because after John Paul II's death in 2005, Ratzinger had the prosecutor general of the *Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith* (i.e. the Office of Inquisition) go to New York to retrieve all the investigative documentation on the sexual charges against Maciel, and the prosecutor returned the following week with more than enough information to have Maciel charged with a lot of criminal activity. Keep in mind that this information on Maciel was known to the Vatican in the early 90s, and possibly sooner than that, so the Vatican sat on this information for, at minimum, over a decade while Maciel continued to rape children.

Ratzinger, even though he had the information, did nothing to prosecute Maciel. After Ratzinger took the office of the Pope as Benedict XVI, he was asked the following by a priest named Lombardi:

**LOMBARDI:** *It is known and recent polls have shown that the sexual abuse scandals have shaken the trust of the faithful in the [Catholic] Church. How do you intend to act so as to re-establish this trust?*

**BENEDICT XVI:** *Above all I must say that these revelations were a shock for me. They are a great sadness, and it is hard to understand how this perversion of the priestly ministry was possible."*

-Joseph Ratzinger, "Interview of the Holy Father Benedict XVI with the Journalists During the Flight to the United Kingdom," Vatican Archives, Sept 16, 2010, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2MbsGWN]

Ratzinger addressed the victims much later in his response, but I want readers to notice that his first response was *NOT* the horror of what was done to these children; the children were an afterthought. Ratzinger's first thought was, "Oh, the horrors of the tarnished name of the precious Catholic priesthood!" This is standard operating procedure in any cult, namely, the tradition and religious system is protected first and foremost so they can give a fake appearance of being "holy" unto men, while they are full of corrupts, death, hypocrisy, and sins abound, and then, *IF* time, money, and circumstance allow, *IF* enough people object, and *IF* it does not dirty the name of the Catholic Church and its hierarchy, the victims might get some help in the form a few pennies thrown at them, as long as they keep their mouths shut about it.

*Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.*

*-Matthew 23:27*

I was curious to see what kind of excuses a Catholic priest might offer in his futile efforts to justify his sexual sins, and so I looked deeper into the case of Lawrence Murphy, a Catholic priest appointed to be headmaster over St. John's School for the Deaf in Milwaukee, Wisconsin in 1963. In 1974, law enforcement began to take notice of sexual abuse reports coming in from the deaf school, but in response to these allegations, the Catholic Church only placed Murphy on temporary sick leave, and he later took up position over various parishes to continue working with children.

(See Andy McSmith, "The priest who abused deaf boys for 24 years," *The Independent*, Mar 27, 2010, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [https://ind.pn/2Mrtzrd])

Years later, many of the young boys, now grown men, tried to bring up charges against Murphy, but as previously mentioned, the statute of limitations would not allow them to do so. Also, some of the boys had been tricked into signing confidentiality clauses against their will.

In criminal law, this scam is known as "fraudulent inducement," in which a person is told they are signing something that is in their benefit, but the forger of the contract takes advantage of an ignorant person who they know cannot understand what is in the contract, ultimately getting them to sign away their rights and property. In this instance, these young men spend most of their time learning a different type of language that makes up for their disability, which means that they may not be able to read and write English as well as others (especially in that time period where not as much emphasis was placed on the education of the disabled), and so they were manipulated into signing documents they were told was to start the process of filing lawsuits against the Catholic Church and priests to get justice for their abuse, but the documents turned out to be nondisclosure agreements that gave Murphy a free pass because the contracts included clauses that stated the boys were at fault for their abuse.

Although Murphy was never prosecuted until his death in 1998, Murphy did go through a psychiatric evaluation with a therapist a few years before he died. I have another book in which I expose the foundational corruption and fraud that makes up psychology and psychiatry (i.e. they are not real sciences, nor are they real medical practices), but for the sake of the information, I want to document the findings.

(Read [Psychology: Hoodwinked by the Devil](#) here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

The notes of the therapist not only document that Murphy had confessed to sexually molesting about 200 children, but the notes also record his excuses for why he committed the crimes:

- *"There was rampant homosexuality among the older boys. I fixed the problem."*
- *"I thought if I'd play around with a kid once per week they would have their needs met."*
- *"I thought I was taking their sins on myself."*
- *"It was sex education for them. They were confused about sex."*
- *"-would feel penis, if erect - would masturbate them."*
- *"Afterward I prayed and went to confession."*

(See Alex Gibney, *Mea Maxima Culpa: Silence in the House of God*, Home Box Office, 2012, retrieved Aug 8, 2018, [youtu.be/ckmZahKS-Zo?t=1h15m25s])

This type of justification is what police departments refer to as "Noble Cause Corruption," which is a method of corruption in which the person who is committing the crime is seen as a noble person with a good cause, and therefore, many people submit to the crime out of fear:

*"Traditional corruption is defined as the use of one's official position for personal gain. The personal gain can be economic or otherwise, such as sexual favors. As a profession, we have long understood this type of abuse of power and, when discovered and investigated, those involved are arrested. A less obvious but perhaps even more threatening type of misconduct in law enforcement is Noble Cause Corruption... Noble Cause Corruption is a mindset or sub-culture which fosters a belief that the ends justify the means. In other words, law enforcement is engaged in a mission to make our streets and communities safe, and if that requires suspending the constitution or violating laws ourselves in order to accomplish our mission, then for the greater good of society, so be it. The officers who adopt this philosophy lose their moral compass."*

-Steve Rothlein, "Noble Cause Corruption," *Public Agency Training Council*, retrieved Aug 7, 2018, [patc.com/weeklyarticles/noble-cause-corruption.shtml]

Though the main focus of the *Public Agency Training Council* article was on police officers who do evil in the name of good, Catholic priests who try to justify their sexual abuse do the exact same thing; believing their sin is a "holy act" in the name of God. This is a form of blasphemy, which is to attribute that which is of the Devil to the Christian God of the Bible.

*Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not. Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me? He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.*  
-John 8:44-47

However, to fully understand Noble Cause Corruption, we need to also understand the mindset of the Catholic victims. Most of the children involved are young enough that they do not even know what sex is, and so they really do not understand what is happening to them, but because of the brainwashed mindset that the Catholic Church is a sacred institution, and that the priests are holy and can do no wrong, it is often accepted by children and ignored by parents. The lie that is perpetuated, namely, the fake appearance of "holiness" of Catholic clergy, is the most damaging crime against families because it is by that corrupt philosophy (i.e. way of thinking) that these sex crimes are allowed to continue in the Catholic Church without anyone questioning them.

*Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy [a way of thinking] and vain deceit [useless lies], after the tradition of men, after the rudiments [first teachings] of the world, and not after Christ.*  
-Colossians 2:8

*Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.*  
-Mark 7:13

The *Canadian Broadcasting Company* published a report in 2007 that an 84-year-old man named Charles Sylvestre died in an Ontario prison three months into his three-year term for sexually assaulting dozens of young girls (12-14 years old) between 1954 and 1986 while he was working as a Catholic priest. Over the years, most of his young victims had suppressed the sexual abuse they suffered, until later in their adult years, the memories of the man (who the young students had nick-named "Sylvester the Molester" and "Father Feeler") came rushing back, and over the course of years, many of the victims found each other, and prosecuted the priest.

(See Andrea Lee, "Elderly Ontario priest convicted of abuse dies in jail," *CBC News*, Jan 23, 2007, retrieved Aug 9, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2noVOfi])

But at the time the abuse occurred, many of the girls thought they had done wrong. The feeling of what Sylvestre did to them, or made them do to him, was a bad feeling, but the girls thought that they must have done something wrong to make him do these things to them (which is a result of the corrupt teachings of the Catholic Church and reinforcement of those corrupt teachings by parents and family), so they ended up blaming themselves and not talking to anyone about what happened because, after all, he is a Catholic priest, and their brainwashed perception was that there was no way a Catholic priest could do anything wrong.

The following video documentary is from a short-lived, hard-to-find TV show called *Unforgivable Crimes*; this episode covered the story of "Father Sylvestre" and his crimes against young girls:

## Pedophile Priest Charles Sylvestre and His Victims

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9wtHD2XGOFM>

**CAROLYN JEWELL:** "The first time I met Father Sylvestre was when he was brought into the class, introduced as a visiting priest. You have to love your priest; I mean, he was a nice person, he appeared to be a nice person. You love all your priests."

(See *Unforgivable Crimes*, "Sins of the Father," Aug 3, 2010, [tvguide.com/tvshows/unforgivable-crimes/436840])

You can see the cultic brainwashed mentality in her thought process which she has had from when she was a child, but she never once gives a logical reason *WHY* she had to honor the priests. In their minds, the priest because the channel between the laity and the heavenly things of God, which is not true in the slightest, but because they believe it, then they continue to automatically assume that the man who wears a priest's garbs is a "safe" person.

This is how Catholic children are raised. Their parents teach them to never question a Catholic priest, and because of that philosophy, Carolyn Jewell became one of Sylvestre's first victims.

**CAROLYN JEWELL:** *"We used to play hide-and-go-seek with him. He took us swimming; he used to make milkshakes for us... We were special. We were the youngest kids in the whole school to begin with, and so we felt—I think we probably flaunted it whenever we saw the high school kids. Like, 'We're the little kids and we're special. He likes us better.'"*

Part of the "special" feeling was that these girls were hand-picked by Sylvestre to volunteer at the Catholic Church. It seemed to give the girls some sense of purpose and value, which they were obviously lacking at home, otherwise, they would have no need for it, but they clung to that, even though the priest had ulterior motives for choosing them.

**IRENE DESCHENES:** *"I just remember feeling so ecstatic, like one of the chosen ones. All the children loved him. There was no reason not to like him; he treated us well and was very kind and gentle."*  
**JOANNE MORRISON:** *"I felt that probably God had something to do with it; that God was happy with me. So if the priest chose me, that it was, in fact, God choosing me. You wanted to be your best, and do your best, and to be picked was an honor—a huge honor."*

It was not just the children who had this philosophy, but also the parents. These women would later testify that Sylvestre would sometimes sexually fondle them in public, where other people could see, even during Catholic services when the families of the girls were present, but no one paid any attention because, after all, he is a priest, and in the Catholic brainwashed mindset, there is no way he could be malicious, so his actions right in front of the parents were ignored.

To put it another way, if this man were not wearing the outfit of a Catholic priest, the parents of these children would be much more protective of their children, and alarmed if the slightest detail seemed suspicious. However, when the man puts on the garb of a priest, their brainwashed philosophy causes him to "magically" become a "good person" in their eyes, and suddenly, they are blinded, leaving them incapable of judging righteous judgment.

[Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.](#)

-John 7:24

This is exactly the same philosophy of the Pharisees in the days of Christ. They were painted as wonderful, moral men of God by the society as a whole, but in reality, they were ravaging wolves full of wickedness:

[And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of ravening](#) [ferocious animal hungry for prey] [and wickedness](#) [sin].

-Luke 11:39

[Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves...](#) [Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.](#)

-Matthew 7:15-17

Sadly, such corruption is not limited to Pharisees or Catholic priests. This is a sin in the Bible called "respecting persons," in which a man is honored solely based on the position he holds (rather than for what he says and does), and it is a rampant problem among pastors in church buildings of many varieties, and yet, most pastors avoid the full doctrine on this subject because it condemns them in their hypocrisy.

(Read "[Respecting Persons is Sin](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

[But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors.](#)

-James 2:9



Once the volunteer work was done, Sylvestre would offer the girls treats, like candy and soda, but he would always make them come sit on his lap to get them. In the video, the women testified:

**JOANNE MORRISON:** *"You had to come and sit on his lap, and this created huge turmoil within me... You would usually need to lie, somehow, to get off the lap; at least, I did. And then, I would have this guilt because, one, I had no idea what sex was, so I had no idea that that's what he was doing to me. All I knew was, I didn't like it, and it gave me a very 'no' feeling."*

**IRENE DESCHENES:** *"He would present us with the candy or pop or whatever, but first he would do this [tapped finger on cheek], and that meant kiss on the cheek. And that wasn't uncomfortable at the time because, you know, I kissed my uncles on the cheek, things like that. Then, as time went on, he would offer us these treats and then he would do this [tapped finger on lips]... The progression was very slow, that it wasn't all of sudden one day saying, 'Oh wait, this is wrong', because what he did yesterday kind of felt a little uncomfortable, but 'it couldn't be wrong'."*

**CAROLYN JEWELL:** *"The first time that Father Sylvestre had touched me, we were playing hide-and-go-seek at the grotto. His rule was that if he found you, he would wrestle with you. He put me on the ground and he felt me up. He also went underneath my clothes, and didn't tell anybody... My initial reaction was that I must have done something wrong; because that felt bad, then I must have done something bad to get him to do that."*

As the video goes on, the victims testify that he would do his worst when he got them alone. He would catch them in a hallway by themselves, or assault them during confessional sessions. Sylvestre told Jewell that if she ever told anyone, she would go to hell, her parents and sister would go to hell, but as long as she did not say anything to anyone about the sexual abuse, he would do what he could to prevent her and her family from ending up in hell, ultimately manipulating the girl into using her love for her family against her.

The truth is that only those who do not come to the humility of repentance (i.e. grief and godly sorrow) of their sin and put their in the Lord Jesus Christ will end up in hell. ALL Catholics, not just Sylvestre, are in danger of hellfire because they do not come to Christ and rely on His grace alone.

(See ["Why Millions of Believers on Jesus Are Going to Hell"](#) & ["Is Repentance Part of Salvation?"](#) here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

As a side note, Irene Deschenes went on to start an organization called *SNAP (Survivors Network of those Abused by Priests)*. This was the first organization specifically started as a help and support group for men, women, and children who are abused by those in positions of religious authority in the Catholic Church. However, that being said, it should also be noted that with money comes greed, and the organization has taken a turn for the worse in 2017, when founders of SNAP departed because lawyers and board members were making decisions that were exploiting abuse victims for cash from settlements.

(See David Gibson, "SNAP founder quits in second major loss for abuse advocacy group following lawsuit," *National Catholic Reporter*, Feb 5, 2017, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [<https://bit.ly/2MOLnwT>])

Noble cause corruption does not only affect girls. I have listened to the testimony of many men who were raped by priests when they were boys.

Just like the young girls, the young boys did not understand sex, and they did not understand the priest was doing something evil. Like the girls, the boys were also embarrassed by the situation, but most importantly, they did not think anyone would believe them even if they told an adult, and often times, they were not believed because, once again, he is a priest, and the noble cause corruption mentality that a "man of the cloth" could do no wrong is a foundation in their Catholic minds, so in a situation where it is their word against his, children find the odds against them, fearing their parents erupting in anger at such an accusation against a supposed "holy man of God."

Some readers may be upset that I would say that this Catholic philosophy is more destructive and does more damage than the acts of child molestation and sexual abuse, but it is true. The reason child sexual abuse gets ignored in such institutions, even when it happens almost in plain view of the parents, is because of the facade of presumed morality in Catholic priests. I cannot emphasize enough that this fallacious, corrupt philosophy is the very reason why millions of Catholic parents remain willingly blind, why massive amounts of sexual abuse continues to come out of parishes around the world, and why children are still being assaulted in Catholicism today.

This matter is not an issue of the Catholic Church's negligence, because that would mean the bishops and popes would just be ignoring the matter; rather, this is an issue of deception and cover-up. To further demonstrate that point, let's take a

closer look at St. John's Abbey in Collegeville, Minnesota, which has recently uncovered criminal activity that could not be described in any other way but accessory to commit serial rape against minors and harboring sex criminals.

After getting small pieces of documentation here and there during the investigation on St. John's Abbey, in 2016, the monastery finally released more than 15,000 pages of documents related to the 18 priests that were sexual offenders: *"The disclosure comes as the latest chapter in the jagged history for the Benedictine community in Collegeville, Minn., on the issue of clergy sexual abuse, one that at times has seen it attempt to lead in understanding the epidemic but at others fall ill to the plague of its horrors. Like many others before them, the disclosed documents provide a recounting of what the abbey knew when regarding each monk — nearly half of whom have died — and often the attempts to shuttle them from place to place to avoid possible lawsuits and scandal."*

-Brian Roewe, "Sexual abuse at St. John's Abbey revealed in 15,000-page disclosure," *National Catholic Reporter*, Jan 22, 2016, retrieved Aug 14, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2KSCsIE]

The shuttling of criminals outside of law enforcement jurisdiction is not only a common theme in Catholicism, but it happens in many other false religious institutions. In the case of the Catholic Church, if a priest is caught sexually molesting children in one parish, he is simply moved to another parish, not to protect the children, but to prevent a potentially embarrassing investigation, and depending on how much knowledge may be available to the public and state officials, the priest will sometimes be moved out of the country in order to prevent him from being prosecuted by any lawful authority.

Continuing from the same report:

*"The thousands of pages from the monks' files — detailing everything from sacramental records and ministerial reviews to medical histories and psychological exams to personal letters and emails — contain many now-common themes from the church's sexual abuse crisis, where [Catholic] officials do not always act on warning signs, sometimes on the back of expert opinions, or fail to heed recommendations from counselors and psychologists. In some cases, priests with known allegations of sexual abuse, whether with minors or college students at St. John's University, were able to continue traveling to the abbey's monasteries abroad, including in Japan and the Bahamas."*

-Brian Roewe, "Sexual abuse at St. John's Abbey revealed in 15,000-page disclosure," *National Catholic Reporter*, Jan 22, 2016, retrieved Aug 14, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2KSCsIE]

Of course, the convicted priests had some duties to perform in these exotic monasteries, but that being said, the fact is that the Catholic Church sends their sex abusers on vacation to exotic islands. This statement is far more literal than most people realize, and to understand that more clearly, we will need to look at the testimony of Patrick Wall, a former student and monk from St. John's Abbey:

*"Patrick Wall, a former monk at the abbey who now works with Anderson's law firm, told NCR the files represent for him and his fellow St. John's graduates 'a confirmation and an affirmation, first of all, that we weren't crazy, and that yes, there were that many perpetrators on campus.'"*

-Brian Roewe, "Sexual abuse at St. John's Abbey revealed in 15,000-page disclosure," *National Catholic Reporter*, Jan 22, 2016, retrieved Aug 14, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2KSCsIE]

Catholics, and others who revere the Catholic Church, would often call Wall crazy for telling people that St. John's Abbey had numerous sex offenders on staff at the school. Wall graduated from St. John's Abbey and went on to be a monk who was a "fixer," meaning that it was his job to travel around and put out fires for the Catholic Church by handing out non-disclosure contracts and settlement money, and he gave the following testimony in a documentary interview:

*"There are treatment centers—before ordination [the act of ordaining], I had no idea that we had treatment centers around the world for priests to go to when they sexually molested, raped, and sodomized kids! I didn't know that. My parents didn't know that. I didn't know that we had 55 molesters in my monastery. I didn't know there were more than 70 molesters operating in the archdiocese. [Catholic district in the region] That wasn't public knowledge... I thought I was going there to uncover the crime, to heal the wounds; I thought it was pastoral care. You know, comfort the afflicted, what we're ordained for, but the people sending me in obviously had ulterior motives. You know, they would give you authorization up to \$250,000 to settle a case, if you could get a confidentiality order. [i.e. the victim cannot talk about it after the document is signed; money for silence] And in 1995, we had a budget of seven million dollars to handle the various problems of childhood sexual abuse. And most people don't want to have anything go public; I mean, in the Catholic mindset, you don't sue the church. They want to know that it's going to stop."*

-Patrick J. Wall, former benedictine monk at St. John's Abbey, interviewed in *Mea Maxima Culpa: Silence in the House of God*, Home Box Office, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [youtu.be/ckmZahKS-Zo?t=23m53s]

Wall is correct on this point because it is a common philosophy in any religious cult that you should never sue the religious leaders of the organization, and likewise, Catholics believe they should not sue their "Mother Church" because they believe it is sinful to see restitution from something that is allegedly "holy." The sad part is that the Catholic Church has no interest in helping any of their victims unless they get sued, so ignoring the abused children, which the papacy has always done, has been the most convenient and lucrative (i.e. financially beneficial) option for them.

Through his new position of covering up the crimes of the Catholic Church, Wall discovered that the settlements paid were only a facade, and that the sexual abuse of children was allowed to continue within the parishes, monasteries, and schools. The money that parishioners may have donated for the relief of the poor and needy was instead being used by the Catholic Church to pay for the silence of victims so the rapists could continue to assault children. In other words, Catholics are being financially used to cover up the crimes of the Catholic Church, and Wall left the Catholic priesthood because he was so disgusted by it.

During the interview, the film crew asked Wall if the Catholic Church had a policy to contact the police in these cases. Wall said, "*Never. That's the worldwide policy: To snuff out scandal.*"

(See Patrick J. Wall, former benedictine monk at St. John's Abbey, interviewed in *Mea Maxima Culpa: Silence in the House of God*, Home Box Office, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [youtu.be/ckmZahKS-Zo?t=25m49s])

If you go back to the beginning of this chapter, I quoted a man named Gerald Fitzgerald, a Catholic priest from Boston, who said that he was amazed at how many men would be in prison if they did not have the title of a priest. In 1947, after receiving many reports of child sex abuse, Fitzgerald formed an organization in the Catholic Church called the *Congregation of the Servants of the Paraclete* (paraclete meaning "advocate" or "counselor"), which still exists today, and the order's purpose was to rehabilitate pedophile priests.

(See *Servants of the Paraclete*, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [theservants.org])



Fitzgerald hoped that the "spiritual" treatment he offered would be the best thing for the rehabilitation of pedophile priests. This is a half-hearted attempt to combat the sexual perversions of the priesthood, and despite his seemingly sincere sentiments, I say "half-hearted" because Fitzgerald accepted repeat offenders into the Paraclete, but never recommended that the police get involved for those who had committed crimes after being through his rehabilitation program at least once, and the simple fact is that there are some people who will never come to repentance until law enforcement gets involved.

I am in no way saying that a pedophile cannot be rehabilitated because I know Jesus Christ saves sinners and changes them for the better, but the Catholic Church is a false religion that is not of God, and so there is no healing that will come from the Spirit of God through their wicked religion. Even though Fitzgerald may have had the right idea that these men should have sorrow for their wrongdoing and turn from it, trying to force repentance never works (i.e. godly sorrow is a gift from God) and it is certainly no punishment to send these men off to lakeside monasteries in a beautiful mountain retreat; that would only reinforce the idea in their minds that there are no real consequences for their offenses against the children.

(Read "[Is Repentance Part of Salvation?](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth;*

*-2 Timothy 2:25*

Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing. For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death. For behold this selfsame thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter.

-2 Corinthians 7:9-11

Because of his flawed belief, Fitzgerald wrote letters to the Pope, and many letters to bishops, talking about the problem of pedophilia in the Catholic Church, and he requested permission to take further actions to expand the Servants of the Paraclete. This idea was attractive to the Catholic Church because they could put Fitzgerald in charge of making their pedophiles disappear from the public and media for a time while they smoothed things over using non-disclosure contracts on the victims.

(See Gerald Fitzgerald, "Oasi Eucaristica: Servi Del S. Paraclito," August 27, 1963, [creationliberty.com/downloads/CATHOLICfitzgerald.pdf])

"So he [Fitzgerald] thought, 'Let's get an island. You can't stop them, but you can contain them. Let's get an island in the Caribbean.' He sent a priest out. He was looking in Barbados, he was looking in various islands, and they went ahead and they actually did begin the process to buy an island."

-Patrick J. Wall, former benedictine monk at St. John's Abbey, interviewed in *Mea Maxima Culpa: Silence in the House of God*, Home Box Office, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [youtu.be/ckmZahKS-Zo?t=39m00s]



Indeed, Fitzgerald sent out a priest by the name of Fitton to search for an island, and when he found one he liked, he put a \$5,000 down-payment on purchasing an island resort for Catholic pedophiles. The island is called Carriacou, off the coast of Grenada in the Caribbean, and is famous for its beautiful beaches and coral reefs.

DOMESTIC SERVICE Check the class of service desired; otherwise this message will be sent as a fast telegram		WESTERN UNION TELEGRAM 1206 (4-55) W. P. MARSHALL, PRESIDENT		INTERNATIONAL SERVICE Check the class of service; otherwise the message will be sent at the full rate	
TELEGRAM	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>			FULL RATE	LETTER TELEGRAM
DAY LETTER	<input type="checkbox"/>	CHARGE TO THE ACCOUNT OF		TIME FILED	
NIGHT LETTER	<input type="checkbox"/>	NO. WDS.-CL. OF SVC.	PD. OR COLL.	CASH NO.	July 19, 1965

FROM: CARRIACOY

TO: FATHER GERALD

Accepted Barbados deal described  
in my letter July 12.

**The Catholic Church accepted a deal to buy an island resort for pedophiles.**

Signed:  
Fitton

However, some of the higher-ups in the chain of command did not like this idea, so they ordered Fitzgerald to sell the portion of the island they had just purchased because, in the end, the Catholic Church decided that hiding them away was not a good idea. If I had to guess based on everything I have studied about the Catholic Church, it was a financial

objection more than anything, meaning that it would be very expensive to have a resort there, the island would not turn a profit for the Catholic Church, and if it got out to the public, it could be damaging to their reputation. Furthermore, the higher-ups could not use it since, if it was discovered to be a resort for pedophiles, and they stayed at that resort, they could be branded as pedophiles as well (whether they were or not). So instead, they decided to attempt rehabilitating the sex offenders in a more simple and speedy process, and recirculate them back into parishes. From the 1950s to 1990s, the Servants of the Paraclete spent 80 million dollars, treating over 2,000 priests in centers located in Europe, Africa, South America, North America, and the Philippines.

(See *Mea Maxima Culpa: Silence in the House of God*, Home Box Office, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [youtu.be/ckmZahKS-Zo?t=39m50s])

I want readers to understand that the entire purpose of all the almost unbelievable amount of time and money spent by the Catholic Church on these matters is to cover up the sex abuse committed by their priests. Because the Catholic Church is tradition-driven, worshiping their traditions and their pope as gods, they have willful participants in whitewashing a false religious institution that is a beacon for rapists and pedophiles.

You might be curious about what happened to the Catholic pedophiles put through the Paraclete rehabilitation experiment, and to see those hidden results, we need to take a closer look at Tony Walsh, a Catholic priest that would end up causing a lot of turmoil in Ireland. In 1979, Walsh was appointed to Ballyfermot, a suburb of Dublin, and became well-known among Catholics as a very talented Elvis Presley impersonator.

As soon as Walsh showed up at "Our Lady of the Assumption Church," he was put in charge of the altar boys. Within two days, the Catholic Church received its first complaint by against Walsh by a young boy's parents.



*"Walsh was born in 1954, and ordained in 1978. He had been a seminarian in Clonliffe College during which, it emerged years later, he abused children there and at the home of another abuser priest Fr Noel Reynolds, to whose house he had a key. Two days after Walsh took up his first appointment as a priest in July 1978, as curate in Ballyfermot, a complaint was received in Archbishop's House that he had sexually abused an eight-year-old boy. That was alleged to have taken place in June 1978 at Fr Reynolds's house. The next complaint was in 1979 when a mother went to the parish priest of Ballyfermot, the late Canon Val Rogers. Another priest in the parish, Fr Michael Cleary, was dispatched to educate the woman's son on male sexuality. In 1985, Canon Rogers admitted this case had been 'hushed up'."*

-Patsy McGarry, "Tony Walsh: More jail time for a 'most notorious' child abuser," *Irish Times*, July 19, 2016, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2w7e692]

Though the Catholic Church was aware of the sexual abuse complaints against Walsh, they continued to cover up his crimes for the next 15 years. Worse still, the Catholic Church never informed parents, let alone the police, and their children were put at risk as he continued to visit home after home in Dublin.

(See Genevieve Carbery, "He was in loads of houses in Ballyfermot and nobody knew," *Irish Times*, Dec 18, 2010, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2MP46It])

Archbishop Connell, presiding over Dublin, held a secret trial, privately done within the confines of the Catholic priesthood, and declared in 1993 that Walsh should be defrocked (i.e. removed from his position as a priest). Walsh pleaded not guilty, even though the evidence was overwhelming and he admitted to over 100 accounts of child sex abuse, and appealed his case to the Vatican; while the Vatican sat on the information, over the course of the next 8 months, Walsh sexually assaulted another child at the funeral of the boy's grandfather.

(See Patsy McGarry, "Tony Walsh: More jail time for a 'most notorious' child abuser," *Irish Times*, July 19, 2016, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2w7e692])

The Vatican just wanted to throw this guy into a closed monastery instead of dismissing him from priesthood, but after numerous letters from other priests and bishops pleading with John Paul II to kick Walsh out (likely because their reputations were being tarnished by his uncontrolled behavior), finally, the Vatican approved his dismissal. (For Catholics who might be reading this, do you not find it amazing that, for such a well-structured and well-funded organization, it only took them 20 years to get rid of him?) After losing his precious Catholic protections and exemptions in 1996, Walsh was finally prosecuted in a state court in 1997.

*"In December 1997, Walsh was sentenced to consecutive terms of six years and four years for assaults on six boys. On appeal this became six years. He was in prison until 2001. In December 2010, Walsh's abuse of one boy from 1978 to 1983 was deemed so extreme he was sentenced to a total of 123 years having been found guilty on 13 separate charges. The most lengthy sentence was for 16 years on a single charge. These were concurrent sentences and four years were suspended as a psychologist's report said it was unlikely Walsh would offend again. In 2013, he pleaded guilty to two more cases and in 2015 was convicted by a jury in relation to the sexual abuse of a girl. On Tuesday, he was jailed for seven and half years for raping a boy three times, once with a crucifix. He is now due for release in June 2023."*

-Patsy McGarry, "Tony Walsh: More jail time for a 'most notorious' child abuser," *Irish Times*, July 19, 2016, retrieved Aug 15, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2w7e692]

If you find it absurd that pedophile rapist like Walsh would receive a lesser sentence because a psychologist thought he would not do it again, I agree with you. It is absurd. This is one of the many reasons I expose the deceptions of psychology in my book, *Psychology: Hoodwinked by the Devil* (free-to-read at creationliberty.com), not only demonstrating how it is used to keep criminals from suffering the consequences of their unlawful actions, but that psychology itself is a concept that was designed by a cocaine-addict, and now fraudulently parades itself as "science."

*O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called:*

*-1 Timothy 6:20*

The point of this story is that Walsh was a product of the Servants of the Paraclete's efforts to rehabilitate and recirculate sex offenders back into the Catholic institutions. Perhaps the Catholic Church would call this a heretical layman's opinion, but to put it mildly, the system does not seem to be working.

Ultimately, it is not the fleeting attempt at rehabilitation that is the problem, but rather, it is the Catholic Church, the Vatican, and Papacy's lackadaisical, uncaring attitude towards child molesters, and it ultimately comes down to the system of traditions, created by men, in a false religious institution that creates and harbors these criminals. For example, formerly defrocked pedophile priests have continued to be reinstated into the Catholic Church to this day:

*"On 2 January, the Vatican published a letter from Pope Francis to the world's bishops in which he reminded them that they must show 'zero tolerance' towards child abuse. The next day, the American Week magazine published an article that told the story of 'Don Mercedes' — Fr Mauro Inzoli, an Italian priest with a passion for expensive cars and underage boys. In 2012, Pope Benedict stripped Inzoli of his priestly faculties, effectively defrocking him. In 2014, however, they were restored to him — by Pope Francis, who warned him to stay away from minors. Then, finally, the Italian civil authorities caught up with this serial groper of teenagers in the confessional. Last summer Inzoli was sentenced to four years and nine months in jail for paedophile offences. The Vatican, under 'zero-tolerance' Francis, refused to supply evidence that prosecutors wanted."*

-Damian Thompson, "Why more and more priests can't stand Pope Francis," *The Spectator*, Jan 14, 2017, retrieved Aug 16, 2018, [spectator.co.uk/2017/01/why-more-and-more-priests-cant-stand-pope-francis]

In case you did not understand, this is a man who is put into a religious leadership position, deceiving the people while he rapes their children. Once he is caught, they pull him aside, give him a bit of a "time-out" and a stern warning, and then put him right back into his position once again.

To summarize, Inzoli was a man who had a history of touching underage boys, and so Pope Francis told him, "Look, we know you have a lengthy history of molesting underage boys, so if you promise us you will not molest anymore underage boys, we will put you in charge of a bunch of underage boys." That is exactly what happened. If a man were truly repentant towards the Lord Jesus Christ, he would know his weaknesses, and he would remove himself from such positions to avoid sin, but Inzoli was more than happy to take up this authority he was granted by Pope Francis because it would give him many more sexual opportunities with young male victims.

The Catholic Church has almost no concern for the victims and the children, and their so-called "zero tolerance" is feigned words that deceive the hearts of those who blindly trust in them.

*For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.*

*-Romans 16:18*

*Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.*

*-Jeremiah 17:5*

When the Bible says "*maketh flesh his arm*" in this passage, it is like when a man twists his ankle, and his friend comes to help him take an arm to lean on to help him walk, which is not wrong. That is perfectly normal. However, when it comes to spiritual matters, most people tend to put their trust in men, instead of trusting in the Lord Jesus Christ, and sadly, when people do this in the Catholic Church, their children suffer the consequences.

Nothing has changed in the Catholic Church. The covering of pedophiles is still happening in 2021:

*"The Archbishop of Hamburg offered to step down on Thursday after a report named him among several senior officials in Germany's Catholic Church to have breached their duty in handling sexual abuse cases over decades. In an 800-page report into the handling of abuse cases in the archdiocese of Cologne between 1975 and 2018, criminal lawyer Bjoern Gercke said he had found more than 200 abusers and more than 300 victims, mostly under the age of 14. The team of lawyers who carried out the report said there were 75 cases in which church officials had failed to carry out their duty although it cleared the Archbishop of Cologne who had commissioned the investigation. Among those named in the report was the Archbishop of Hamburg Stefan Hesse, who responded by saying he had never taken part in a cover-up but acknowledged he had made mistakes. 'To avert damage to the office of Archbishop and to the Archdiocese of Hamburg, I offer Pope Francis my resignation and ask him to relieve me of my duties immediately,' he said."*

-Madeline Chambers, "German archbishop offers to resign after Church abuse cover-up report," *Reuters*, Mar 18, 2021, retrieved Mar 27, 2021, [<https://reut.rs/31myt1J>]

The ridiculous part about this is that Pope Francis has been assisting pedophiles for a long time. So in short, a man who was covering for pedophiles, claimed to the media that he was not covering for pedophiles (i.e. he just slipped on a banana peel 11 times while protecting the other vicar clowns), then resigned to protect the reputation of the Archdiocese, which already had a bad reputation, which we can clearly see from an 800-page report filled with hundreds of criminals and victims. (And those are just the ones that got caught!)

Even fake president Joe Biden's priest, Kevin O'Brien, the man who presided over the mass for Biden's fraudulent inauguration on Jan 20th, 2021, was placed on administrative leave (as of March, 2021) due to his "*inappropriate behavior*." Though what was labeled as "*inappropriate*" and "*adult*" misconduct is not being shared publicly, a number of witnesses have come forward with sexual abuse allegations against O'Brien, the man who Biden described as an "*American treasure*" back in 2016. (Knowing Biden's tendency to sniff little girls, it should be no surprise that he is good friends with a pedophile priest.)

(See Gabriel Keane, "Biden's Inaugural Priest Is Under Investigation For 'Adult' Misconduct, Has Been Placed on Administrative Leave," *National File*, Mar 19, 2021, retrieved Mar 27, 2021, [<https://bit.ly/3daRGcv>])

The victimization of these children does not stop with the priests because, after the abuse, there is a lot of suffering, not only in life and marriages afterwards, but also because the risk of suicide heavily increases for the victims. *Four Corners*, an Australian company that makes documentaries, published details on child sexual abuse in the Catholic Church around Victoria and New South Wales, and they documented a meeting of men in Ballarat who call themselves "The Survivors," which consists mostly of victims of child sex abuse at the hands of Catholic priests.

The documentary is unique in that it covers the large number of suicides, or attempted suicides, that have taken place by men who, when they were boys, were victims of sex abuse in the Catholic Church. Sadly, these deaths do not get added to the criminal account of the Catholic Church. Worse still is that their grief over the cover-up of crimes of the pedophile priests in the Catholic Church, and in some cases, even the uncaring attitude of police and the courts, are what led up to these men attempting or committing suicide.

*"Police are now investigating a possible link between child sexual abuse by Catholic clergy, and at least 40 suicides in Victoria."*

-Four Corners, "Unholy Silence," *ABC*, June 28, 2012, retrieved Aug 16, 2018, [[abc.net.au/4corners/unholy-silence/4112724](http://abc.net.au/4corners/unholy-silence/4112724)]



The documentary goes on to focus on Damian Jurd, a man who killed himself in 2001 out of grief over the repeated sexual assault he endured as a young boy from a Catholic priest. The media was only legally allowed to call the priest "Father F," but I do not have the same restrictions, so after some investigation, I can tell you his name is John J. Farrell. Jurd's parents testified that they did not know Farrell was raping their son; Damian suddenly went from being a well-behaved child to a mean boy getting into trouble, and eventually ran away from home and got himself involved in criminal activity.

The part I want to highlight about this particular case is the way the court treated the matter. In 1987, Farrell was arrested for five counts of indecent assault and six counts of sexual intercourse without consent, but the court saw Jurd as a "wayward youth," meaning that he now had a criminal record, and they saw Farrell as an upstanding priest, which means this ended up becoming a trial by appearance, rather than a trial by facts.

Again, Jesus said:

*Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.*  
-John 7:24

The Catholic Church spent a lot of money trying to cover up the abuse to protect their reputation, rather than investigate the matter to help Damian, and because none of the other eye witnesses were interviewed, Damian had to testify alone:

**"REPORTER:** *Church authorities did not approach other altar boys they knew could have supported Damian's case. Instead, no expense was spared defending the accused priest... Damian Jurd, now age 15, and with a criminal record, offered his testimony alone.*

**JURD:** *'I said "stop it" and he asked "why?" He kept doing it... He started groaning and he rolled onto his side and he started touching himself... I just buried my head in the pillow, buried my face in the pillow and cried.'*

**REPORTER:** *A jury would never hear Damian's evidence. The magistrate decided it would be rejected when set against the word of Father F.*

**JUDGE:** *'He has no previous convictions and he is a Catholic priest... and obviously Damian must come out second best there.'*

-Four Corners, "Unholy Silence," ABC, June 28, 2012, retrieved Aug 16, 2018, [abc.net.au/4corners/unholy-silence/4112724]

Justice is not blind when it comes to protecting the Catholic Church. Again, this is respecting persons:

*My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons. For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts?*  
-James 2:1-4

Not only was this immensely embarrassing for a teenage boy to have to come out to talk about how he was powerless, crying while another man raped him, but the courts would not even accept his testimony and Farrell got away with it. Farrell was declared innocent on the basis that he was a Catholic priest, and no other investigation took place to question the other boys. Jurd walked away embarrassed having to testify publically what was done to him behind closed doors, embarrassed at the way people looked at him now that they thought he was a liar, suing against the "oh-so-holy" Catholic Church, and eventually, many years later, after he felt the grief and despair was too much to handle, his family members came home to find him hanging from the tree in the backyard.

As far as I am aware, John Farrell has never faced justice for his crimes. Damian Jurd was not the only victim; several other men have come forward to testify that he raped them too, and one of Farrell's victims, Daniel Powell, also killed himself.

I want to remind readers that this is just the tip of the iceberg when it concerns the criminal activity of the Catholic Church. It would take an entire library to contain all the information on the hidden crimes of the Catholic Church, but I hope this chapter is enough to prove the point, and help readers do their own research and investigations into these matters.



## #11 – The Great Whore of the Scarlet Beast

In Revelation 17, John is being shown the end of the world and wrath of God poured out upon it. Seven angels pour out vials of God's wrath on the earth.

*And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.*

*-Revelation 17:1-2*

In this chapter, I am going to demonstrate that, based on the currently available information we have, the Great Whore mentioned in Revelation 17 is almost certainly Rome; more specifically, the Roman Catholic Church. Though some may have a hard time believing such an extreme statement, I hope you will first look at the evidence in this chapter before drawing any conclusions.

*So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.*

*-Revelation 17:3*



The beast in this passage represents the final global kingdom, which will be ruled over by ten leaders; those ten leaders will then kick out three of them, and an eighth will be added, which will be the final antichrist.

(Read "[The Beginner's Guide to Christian Rapture](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details; See also [Daniel 7:7-8](#) for more details on the horns being the kings of the earth.)

The woman riding this beast would be someone who is in control of the beast. She sits comfortably on top, as would any rider who was on friendly terms with a beast. We are going to look at four basic descriptions in Revelation 17 that will help us clearly identify the Roman Catholic Church as this woman.

### 1. The Great Whore is a City on Seven Hills

Revelation tells us that the woman is a city:

*And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.*

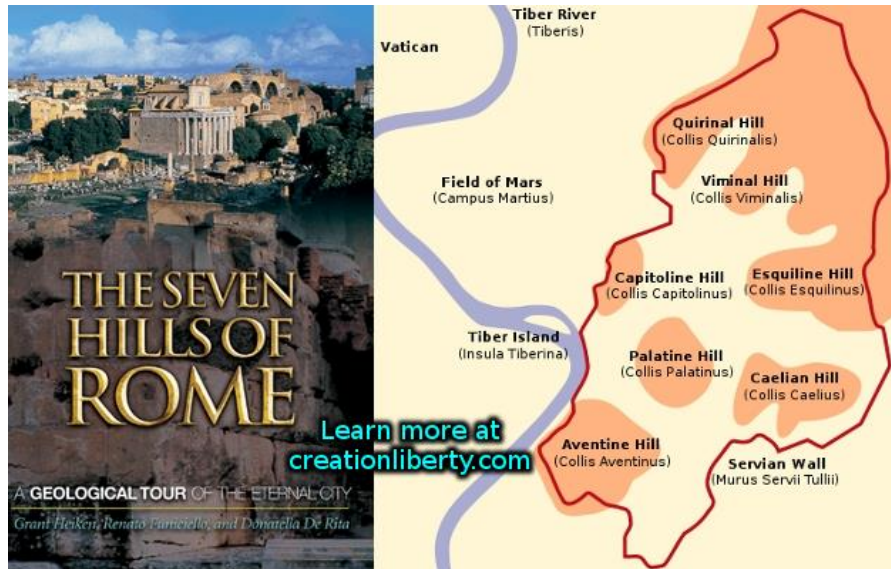
*-Revelation 17:18*

This city sits on location where there are seven mountains, or hills:

*The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.*

*-Revelation 17:9*

As far as I am aware, there are about 83 cities in the world that claim to be on seven hills, which helps to narrow our search a bit. These range from Staten Island, New York, to Athens, Greece, to New South Wales, Australia; however, there is one city that is most famously known around the world as "The City of Seven Hills," and that is Rome, Italy.



(See Grant Heiken & Renato Funicello, *The Seven Hills of Rome: A Geological Tour of the Eternal City*, Princeton University Press, 2007, ASIN: B011SJL8DY)

Rome, and Vatican City (which was part of Rome until 1929 when the Catholic Church took over, but it still resides within Rome today), are all part of the "Seven Hills" tour that visitors take every year. It is not hard to find this information; just go to any basic search engine, type in "seven hills tour," and many results will appear for Rome and the Vatican.

The book of Daniel predicted all the global empires of the world, and gave specific details about them. These appeared, just as God foretold, in this order:

1. The Babylonian Empire under Nebuchadnezzar
2. The Medo-Persian Empire under Darius
3. The Grecian Empire under Alexander
4. The Roman Empire under Caesar

(See [Daniel 7:19-27](#))

Neither Babylon, Persia, nor Greece claim to be cities set on seven hills, but Rome does, and the Vatican is sitting in the heart of the city of Rome, as the *Catholic Encyclopedia* states:

*"It is within the city of Rome, called the city of seven hills, that the entire area of Vatican State proper is now confined."*  
 -*The Catholic Encyclopedia*, Thomas Nelson, 1976, s.v. "Rome."; See also Rory Roybal, *Miracles or Magic?*, Xulon Press, 2005, p. 30, ISBN: 9781597812504

However, one piece of evidence is not enough. Before jumping to conclusions, let's continue to look at more evidence in Scripture to identify the Great Whore.

## 2. The Great Whore Dresses in Purple & Scarlet with a Golden Cup in Hand

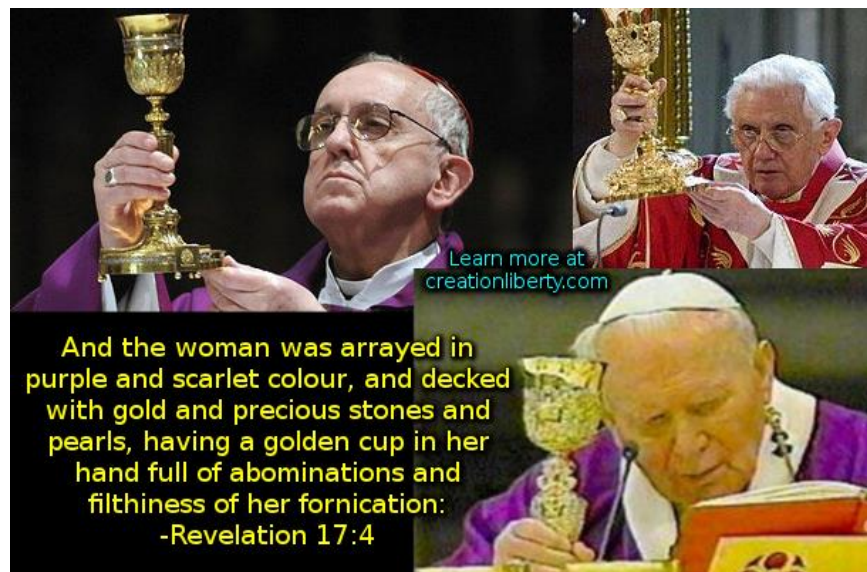
*And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication:*  
 -*Revelation 17:4*

Of the 80+ cities that sit on seven hills, only one is known for adorning themselves in purple and scarlet (red). One would think that more Catholics might have their eyes opened to the truth, but not only are most brainwashed with a cultic mentality, meaning that they are never willing to even consider that the Catholic Church could be evil, but as we read earlier, they are dissuaded from studying the Bible for themselves, so most of them are completely ignorant of what Revelation says.

Because most Catholics are ignorant of what Revelation teaches, they are also ignorant that purple and scarlet are the main two colors worn by Catholic clergy:



The golden cup of abomination is also clear to see:



**abomination** (n): defilement, pollution, evil doctrines and practices which are moral defilements, idols and idolatry

(See 'abomination', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Aug 23, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

In [chapter three](#) we went over the spiritual abominations of the Catholic Mass and Eucharist, and that is what is being referred to here in Revelation when speaking of the golden cup. Though Christ's blood sacrifice was done once for the sins of all, the Catholic Church makes the people drink "blood" (through transubstantiation) out of a golden cup, and the "abomination" spoken of in verse four is this defilement of Christ's holy blood, or in other words, Christ's blood saves once for all, but Catholic "blood" pollutes and defiles that which Christ did on the cross.

The book of 1 Corinthians, in chapter ten, helps explain this abomination further:

*Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.*

-1 Corinthians 10:4

This explains to us that the Hebrews who followed the Lord God out of the captivity of Egypt also followed Christ because Christ and God are one. (John 10:30) Their salvation was by grace alone through faith alone, not of works; just as we have in this dispensation under Christ, but the Catholic Church teaches in opposition to this doctrine because they are idolaters, just as those who were destroyed at Mount Sinai and in the wilderness.

*But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted. Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents. Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer. Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition [reproof], upon whom the ends of the world are come.*

-1 Corinthians 10:5-11

These things were written as a warning to us, not to turn unto fornication with idols, but many have turned to the Catholic Church and their idols in defiance against God. Of course, the Catholic Church claims they approve of and support these verses, while they violate them at the same time.

*Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry. I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.*

-1 Corinthians 10:14-17

Notice that the commandment to flee from idolatry comes right before the part about communion in the bread and drink. This is no coincidence. Though the Catholic Church might quote from these few verses, they typically reject the verses of warning that follow because they will not consider the fact that we are warned to flee from the idolatry of men like those who rule over the Catholic Church:

*Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar? What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing? But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils. Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.*

-1 Corinthians 10:18-21

**The golden cup of the Catholic Mass is the cup of devils, and abomination of the Great Whore.**

Revelation also tells us the Great Whore is decked (i.e. covered) with pearls and precious stones, which is not a foreign concept to the popes of Rome. As a priest climbs the ladder of hierarchy in the Catholic Church, his decorations become more elaborate, fancy, and expensive.



*Labour not to be rich: cease from thine own wisdom.*

-Proverbs 23:4

### 3. The Great Whore is a Harlot Who Fornicates with Kings

*And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.*

*-Revelation 17:5*

There are many people who have misunderstood, and created false doctrines from, the phrase "Mystery Babylon," but in a nutshell, the mystery of Babylon is that the people worshiped false gods, and after God separated their languages ([Gen 11:9](#)), they continued to worship their false gods, but now they all called those gods by different names. The purpose of Rome is to bring all those gods back under one unity again, like in the days of Babel, and that is why it is known as "Mystery Babylon."

As we learned in the [first chapter](#), Rome and the Catholic Church has had a long-standing history of merging pagan traditions and religious institutions under one umbrella. This is the act of spiritual harlotry, which is one who sells the body to turn a profit:

*harlot* (n): a woman who prostitutes her body for hire; in Scripture, one who forsakes the true God and worships idols

(See 'harlot', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Aug 17, 2018, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

*Lest thou make a covenant with the inhabitants of the land, and they go a whoring after their gods, and do sacrifice unto their gods, and one call thee, and thou eat of his sacrifice;*

*-Exodus 34:15*

*Thou hast also committed fornication with the Egyptians thy neighbours, great of flesh; and hast increased thy whoredoms, to provoke me to anger.*

*-Ezekiel 16:26*

Do not misunderstand; a city cannot strip down its clothing and have sexual intercourse with another city. That is nonsensical. The context of whoredom is an analogy, which is a comparison between two things to explain a matter. A whore is someone who, for the sake of money and/or power, forsakes God's authority and commandments concerning marriage and commits fornication; thus, the analogy is that the city in general, for the sake of money and power, forsakes God's authority and commandments concerning idolatry, which is following after false gods. Just as most Israelites claim they are of God, but follow after idols and traditions of men, so too do Catholics claim to be of Christ while following after idols and traditions of men, making them cities of spiritual fornication.

If you have read all the previous chapters, it should not be difficult for you to see the harlotry and abominations committed by the Roman Catholic Church, both literal and spiritual. When a city is said to commit fornication, it is speaking generally in the spiritual sense, and leads us to conclude that the Great Whore is a city that is well-known for its religious institutions, which perfectly fits Rome.

For example, Jerusalem is recognized worldwide as a spiritual city, and is often called "The Holy City," and that is because, in the Bible, the Jews were chosen by God to represent Him and His Word in their nation, and in this city. The Jews committed fornication with other gods, and have become as a harlot ([Isa 1:21](#)), but this cannot be the city talked about in Revelation 17 because it is not built on seven hills. In the same manner, Mecca is a so-called "holy city" according to Muslims, but it does not rest on seven hills either.

(Read "[Islam: Religion of Terror](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)



A Catholic would argue that the Vatican sits slightly off the central seven hills location, across the river to the east; however, that is only because the Pope and priests were kicked out during the Italian Revolution in the 19th century. The Vatican was gifted to the Roman Catholic Church by Italy in the 20th century (as we will soon learn), and with their massive wealth, the Catholic Church is slowly buying up property throughout all of Italy, including Rome.

Many churchgoers are willingly blind and blissfully ignorant of the Catholic Church's strong push to unify all religions under Rome leadership. I document some of the more recent efforts in a teaching I have here at creationliberty.com called, "[Pope Francis's Deceptive John 17 Movement](#)," and I would encourage readers to check out the article and videos with it to get all the information. Thus, the Catholic Church is not only committing spiritual fornication, but is also keeping alive the spirit of the Roman Empire, bringing all people under their authority.

The following video is a news report from 2008:

### International Catholic Meeting “Prayer for Peace”

[https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=I\\_welrpe7b0](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=I_welrpe7b0)

**REPORTER:** *"The International Prayer for Peace in Cyprus... began with a Eucharistic celebration in the Holy Cross Catholic Church in Nicosia [capital city of Cyprus], presided over by Cardinal Leonardo Sandri, prefect [chief officer] of the Congregation of the Oriental Churches. The meeting is entitled, 'A Civilization of Peace: Faiths and Cultures in Dialogue,' and will conclude on Tuesday, November 18th. Representatives of Christian [i.e. Catholic and Catholic-supporting] churches and ecclesial communities attended the Eucharistic celebration. In his homily [sermon], Cardinal Sandri underlined that hospitality, patience, and hope are the sure ways of cultivating the true talent of religions, and recalled that all religions are an extraordinary, vital force for humanity, as long as each religion is open to truth. Finally, the prefect for the Oriental Churches said that Christianity [i.e. Catholicism] is a gift for Europe and for the world, given that it aims towards the development of each man and woman in their historical and eternal vocation."*

This is the Catholic Church's continued effort to bring all religious leaders under Rome's leadership, calling all wicked, pagan religious cults around the world "*an extraordinary, vital force for humanity,*" and I want to remind readers that such a statement is found nowhere in Scripture. Keep in mind that it is *NOT* Christianity they believe is a "*gift for the world,*" but rather, they believe *CATHOLICISM* is a gift for the world, despite the fact that, as we have already demonstrated in earlier chapters, the Catholic Church is *NOT* "*open to truth.*"

The only "*eternal vocation*" for all those who follow Catholicism will be hell and the lake of fire:

*But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.*

*-Revelation 21:8*

*(Read "[Hell Is Real And Many People Are Going There](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)*

The following is a 2008 news report, two days later in Cyprus, of an international meeting of religious leaders, another Catholic effort, disguised as "peace," to unify all religious leaders under Rome's banner:

### International Summit “Prayer for Peace” Cyprus 2008

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ckVIXhHHXMU>

**REPORTER:** *"Mario Marazziti, spokesperson of the Community of Sant'egidio [Catholic Church that focuses on world peace] that organizes one of the most significant world encounters between religions, explains the value of religion in a world in crisis from the Mediterranean island of Cyprus."*

**MARAZZITI:** *"Religions help discover what is important in life, that is, to work for a world with more justice. Here, we must once more learn to live with other religions because, when you are in crisis, each person is tempted to think only of himself, and to see the other as an enemy; a competitor. Religions have the ability to give hope to men and women of our time. We should work for a different world because it seems like we are in the aftermath of a world war that is not yet finished."*

**REPORTER:** *"The city of Nicosia is showing great enthusiasm for this encounter that represents a further step towards peace, and that the Community of Sant'egidio has organized since 1987, after the World Day of Prayer in Assisi [Italy] composed by John Paul II on Oct 22, 1986."*

When Marazziti said that "*religions help discover... a world with more justice,*" where did he get that from? He certainly did not get that from the Bible. Please do not misunderstand; I am not saying it is wrong to seek justice for wrongdoings, but true religion is to be sanctified (i.e. set apart) from the world, and to help the poor and needy.

*Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.*

-James 1:27

Do not be deceived because the purpose of their meeting was to yoke together with the world as one. They did not come together to discuss how they can better serve the widows and orphans, but rather, they came together to declare "peace and safety" to the world.

(Read "[The Biblical Understanding of Sanctification](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief.*

-1 Thessalonians 5:2-4

*Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay [No]; but rather division:*

-Luke 12:51

*Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?*

-1 Corinthians 5:6

leaven (n): something which corrupts or depraves that with which it is mixed

(See 'leaven', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Apr 10, 2021, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

In the video, all sorts of wicked, false religions from around the world had representatives at this meeting to have dialogue. Their true purpose was to find a way to work together under the same yoke, which ignores the commandments of Scripture because we Christians are not to be yoked together with such people in spiritual matters.

yoke (): a chain; a link; a bond of connection

(See 'yoke', *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Noah Webster, 1828, retrieved Apr 10, 2021, [webstersdictionary1828.com])

*Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? [i.e. one who does not believe Scripture] And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.*

-2 Corinthians 6:14-18



In [chapter seven](#), we briefly covered John Paul II's conference of religions to pray for peace. They invited Buddhists, Hindus, Muslims, and many other religions from all around the world in one giant perversion against God, and as we have seen in the above news reports, those conferences have continued to take place, the only difference from then and now is that more religions have joined in with this abomination over time. The only religion in this world that has not represented in those meeting are those us who are the children of the Living God, born again in His Son, Jesus Christ, because we are taught to be sanctified away from the wicked traditions of this world.

*Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.*

-1 John 2:15-17

However, it is not just religious leaders that Rome is trying to put under their umbrella, it is also nations and governments. This is another key point because the Bible tells us the Great Whore will reign over kings:

*And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.*

-Revelation 17:18

If you took at a close look at the 80+ cities that sit on seven hills, among those who are considered religious cities, there is one, and *ONLY* one, that has ever been known to reign over kings, and that is the Roman Catholic Church. The Catholic Church has a well-known, long-standing history of kings fearing the rule of the Roman Papacy.

*Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.*

-John 18:36

One day, Christ will return to rule over this world, but for now, His servants are commanded not to make physical war with the world:

*For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds; Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;*

-2 Corinthians 10:4-5

However, the Catholic Church has had a long-standing history of making war with the world using the carnal weapons of warfare. The Crusades and the Office of Inquisition alone should be more than enough proof of that. The Catholic Empire has amassed property, wealth, and influence to the point that they rival just about any other empire in history. The Catholic Church has engaged in partnerships with emperors and kings, and has fornicating with the kings of the earth in a shared bed throughout the last 1700 years.



For example, Pope Gregory VII (1073-1085) published an official outline (*Dictatus Papae*) of the powers of the Papacy. The following is a list of some of the powers Pope Gregory declared that his office of the papacy has, and I want to remind readers that these are direct quotes from that document:

- *"The Roman Church was founded solely by God."*
- *"All princes shall kiss the feet of the Pope alone."*
- *"His name alone shall be spoken in the churches."*
- *"This is the only name in the world."*
- *"It may be permitted to him to depose emperors."*
- *"A sentence passed by him may be retracted by no one."*
- *"He himself may be judged by no one."*
- *"No one shall dare to condemn any person who appeals to the Apostolic Chair.  
[i.e. The Pope]"*
- *"The Roman Church has never erred. Nor will it err, to all eternity."*
- *"He who is not at peace with the Roman Church shall not be considered 'catholic'."*
- *"He may absolve subjects from their fealty to wicked men."*

(See Pope Gregory VII, *Dictatus Papae*, 1090, retrieved Aug 21, 2018, [history.hanover.edu/courses/excerpts/344dict.html]; See also "Revisiting Dictatus Papae," *Unam Sanctam Catholicam*, retrieved Aug 21, 2018, [https://bit.ly/2MtVrzd])

When Gregory spoke of *"His name alone shall be spoken in the churches,"* and that his name *"is the only name in the world,"* he was not talking about God or Christ; rather, he was talking about himself, and whoever would hold the seat of the papacy. Based on what we learned earlier, that the Catholic Church believes that their pope is God, these statements should be no surprise.

If any Catholic may still be reading this book, you need to understand that, no matter how many songs they sing or rituals they perform, the Catholic Church does *NOT* worship Jesus Christ; they worship their pope as a god. Of course, many Catholics who have been conditioned to fear the priests and popes will be very uncomfortable with such a statement, but there will come a day where you will have to choose who you will serve, and you cannot serve Christ and Catholicism at the same time.

*And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.*

*-Joshua 24:15*

Gregory's declaration said he had the power to *"absolve subjects from their fealty to wicked men,"* and in case some readers did not understand that, he is talking about the subjects of servants to their lords. In this context, it means that those who have sworn an oath of loyalty to a king may be absolved of that oath if the Pope declares the king to be wicked and deposes him (i.e. forcefully removes him from office), which demonstrates the point I am making in this section, namely, that the popes of Rome have had more power than the kings of the earth.

When Pope Gregory VII wrote, *"It may be permitted to [the Pope] to depose emperors,"* this was no idle statement or call to impress. This was meant literally, and the evidence speaks for itself.

The following list is a few examples of popes who have kicked kings off their thrones:

YEAR	CATHOLIC POPE	DEPOSED KING
1076	Gregory VII	Henry IV of Rome
1160	Alexander III	Frederick I of Rome
1245	Innocent IV	Frederick II of Rome

1283	Martin IV	Peter III of Aragon*
1303	Boniface VIII	Philip IV of France
1512	Julius II	Louis XII of France
1570	Pius V	Elizabeth I of England
1585	Sixtus V	Henry III of Navarre**

(\* = Aragon was a territory in what is now known as Spain, along with some western Mediterranean islands.)

(\*\* = Navarre was also in the territory known today as Spain, a small kingdom next to Aragon.)

By now, I hope readers are beginning to see that the Roman Catholic Church, or rather, Rome itself is a great city "*which reigneth over the kings of the earth.*" There is no other spiritual/religious entity that has done such things and held such power. For many centuries, the rulers of Europe and many other countries around the world, knew not to question or oppose the Roman Pontiff in any way, else they would lose their crown.

In 1229, Pope Gregory IX created a papal bull (i.e. formal document) called *In Coena Domini* (in supper) to be read at Catholic Masses at different times throughout the year. By 1372, the Papacy, through this document, had declared papal authority over the entire world, and excommunicated all those who would not obey the popes and pay them taxes. (Just to clarify, you did not misread that; the Roman Catholic Church collected taxes.) Pope Julius II gave *In Coena Domini* the reinforcement of law, and it was heavily applied during the reign of Pope Pius V in 1568 (almost 200 years later), forbidding rulers to "*receive or to correspond with non-Catholics... prohibited any appeal to council from the decisions of Rome... forbade taxation of the clergy without the permission of the pope... prohibited secular courts from exercising jurisdiction over members of the upper clergy,*" and if any citizen objected, all appeals made to local courts were to be readdressed to the Catholic clergy for judgment. (i.e. The Catholic Church, which had become immune to taxation, became the judge and jury against itself in all cases.)

(See William J. Bouwsma, *Venice and the Defense of Republican Liberty: Renaissance Values in the Age of the Counter Reformation*, University of California Press, 1968, p. 237-238, ISBN: 9780520052215; 1229 A.D. is the earlier known document to exist for *In Coena Domini*.)

In fact, this was the argument about papal ruling authority was primary reason why the Anglican Church, or the Church of England, was formed. Please do not misunderstand, the Anglicans are exactly the same as the Catholic Church and do all the same abominations; the only difference between them is political, meaning that the Anglicans do not recognize the Pope as the highest authority, so do not let them fool you into thinking they are sanctified and serving Jesus Christ. It is well-documented that Henry VIII started the Anglicans in the 16th century, and declared himself leader over the Anglican Church (very similar to how Constantine started the Roman Catholics), all because the Pope would not let him get a divorce.

(See Cathy Caridi, "If the Church Has Never Permitted Divorce, Why Did Henry VIII Expect the Pope to Give Him One?" *Canon Law Made Easy*, June 23, 2016, retrieved Aug 24, 2018, [canonlawmadeeasy.com/2016/06/23/church-never-permitted-divorce-henry-viii])

Because of the media (in combination of the willful ignorance of the people), most people think the Catholic Church has no real power or influence into governing and political matters. They like to think that these papal bulls were all long ago, and far away, like some whimsical fairy tale, because the Catholic Church lost a lot of its political power during the 19th century Italian revolution, which drove out the papacy and siezed their assets, but few people understand that the popes of Rome have continued to expand their authority over the nations to this day.

For example, the Catholic papacy allied with Italian Prime Minister (and fascist dictator) Benito Mussolini in 1929. Even though Italy experienced decades of war against the Catholic Church, not only did Mussolini give the Catholic Church the Vatican (which is currently the smallest nation in the world at 109 acres sitting in the midst of Rome), but he also gave them a huge cash payout to gain their favor.



The concordat (i.e. pact or agreement) between the Pope of Rome and King of Italy states that not only did the Catholic Church obtain the Vatican as their own country, but they were also paid almost a billion lire (Italian currency):

**Article 1.** *Italy, on the exchange of ratifications [agreements] of the Treaty, shall pay to the Holy See the sum of Italian lire 750,000,000 (seven hundred and fifty millions) and at the same time consign Italian 5 per cent bonds (with coupons [certificates], June 30) of the nominal value of Italian lire 1,000,000.*

**Article 2.** *The Holy See declares that it accepts the above as a definite systemization of the financial relations with Italy in consequence of the events of 1870.*

**Article 3.** *All the acts necessary for the execution of the Treaty with regard to the present Convention and of the Concordat shall be exempt from every form of taxation."*

-The Financial Convention Annexed to the Treaty, Pietro Cardinal Gasparri & Benito Mussolini, quoted by International Business Publications, *Vatican City Business Law Handbook: Strategic Information and Laws*, 2013, p. 69-70, ISBN: 9781438771366

In case you may not have understood, the Italian government agreed to pay the Catholic Church 750 million lire in cash, and another million in bonds, which they accepted as restitution for damages to their property during the Italian Revolution. Remember the pridefulness of the Papacy; there was no way they would have ever agreed to peace without the Italian government bending the knee to the throne of the Pope and offering apologies in the manner of gifts.

On top of that, the Italian government declared that the Catholic Church would no longer have to pay taxes, which is a repeat of the same ordinances made in their benefit hundreds of years prior. Again, what other spiritual entity can you think of that has made kings submit in such ways? If this is not a clear demonstration of the Catholic Church reigning over the kings of the earth, then nothing can be considered to be reigning over the kings of the earth.

Four years later, the Catholic Church signed a similar concordant with Adolf Hitler called the *Reichskonkordat*, receiving special privileges, titles, and cash handouts. However, this deal came with other stipulations, and in the concordat, Article 16 states the following:

*"Before bishops take possession of their dioceses [office of administration] they are to take an oath of fealty either to the Reich representative of the state concerned, or to the President of the Reich, according to the following formula: Before God and on the Holy Gospels I swear and promise, as becomes a bishop, loyalty to the German Reich and to the State of... I swear and promise to honor the legally constituted government and to cause the clergy of my diocese to honor it. In the performance of my spiritual office and in my solicitude for the welfare and the interests of the German Reich, I will endeavor to avoid all detrimental acts which might endanger it."*

(See Frank J. Coppa, *Controversial Concordats*, CUA Press, 1999, The Concordat of 1933, Article #16, p. 209, ISBN: 9780813209203; See also *The Nazi Germany Sourcebook: An Anthology of Texts*, Psychology Press, 2002, p. 158, ISBN: 9780415222143)

To clarify, the Catholic Church accepted money, titles, and benefits in exchange for their priests and bishops swearing allegiance to the Nazis. The Roman Pontiff did this, and the Catholic clergy swore their oaths, caring nothing for the commandments of Jesus Christ on such matters:

*Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.*

*-Matthew 5:33-37*

*(Read "[God Does Not Justify Lies](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)*

Investigative reporter John Cornwell was published in *Vanity Fair* for his research on the truth behind a long-held accusation against Pope Pius XII (Eugenio Pacelli) that he had helped Hitler and the Nazis achieve their goal because Nazism was in line with Catholic goals. Cornwell's original plan was to prove that Pius XII did not support the Nazis, and that Pius was not guilty of what he had been accused of, but after being granted access to hidden files in the Vatican's archives in the late 90s, spending weeks in study, he discovered that not only was Pius XII anti-Jew, he also worked together with the Nazis to quell all resistance against the Catholic Church:

*"By the middle of 1997, I was in a state of moral shock... The evidence was explosive. It showed for the first time that Pacelli [Pius XII] was patently [clearly, without doubt], and by the proof of his own words, anti-Jewish. It revealed that he had helped Hitler to power and at the same time undermined potential Catholic resistance in Germany. It showed that he had implicitly denied and trivialized the Holocaust [i.e. he made the holocaust seem like an unimportant matter], despite having reliable knowledge of its true extent. And, worse, that he was a hypocrite, for after the war he had retrospectively taken undue credit for speaking out boldly against the Nazis' persecution of the Jews. [i.e. Pius lied about it to make himself look good after the Nazis lost the war.]"*

-John Cornwell, "Hitler's Pope: Pope Pius XII helped Hitler destroy German Catholic political opposition," *Vanity Fair*, October, 1999, retrieved Aug 17, 2018, [vanityfair.com/style/1999/10/pope-pius-xii-199910]

Not only did the Pope help the Nazi war machine to succeed in Europe, but after the Nazis were defeated, he tried to claim that he was one of the few voices to speak out against the Nazis. The hypocrisy is overwhelming, especially after we consider the oath they took to never speak a bad word about the Nazi regime, but the popes will say and do whatever is necessary to benefit themselves, operating according to the corrupt Jesuit philosophy of "*the end justifies the means.*"

The United States has also allied with the Roman Pontiff, as demonstrated by Ronald Regan and the CIA. Secretary of State Alexander Haig commented on the Vatican's help in official investigations, saying, "*The Vatican's information was absolutely better and quicker than ours in every respect.*"

(See *Congressional Record*--House, Vol. 151, Pt. 4, Government Printing Office, April 6, 2005, p. 5752; See also *Time Magazine*, 1992, Vol. 139, p. 327)

The Vatican liaison to the White House, Archbishop Pio Laghi, a Vatican diplomat (i.e. "Apostolic Nuncio"), told American intelligence officials:

*"Listen to the Holy Father. We have 2000 years experience of this."*

-Seymour M. Hersh, "On the Nuclear Edge," *New Yorker*, March 29, 1993, quoted by Christopher Andrew, *For the President's Eyes Only: Secret Intelligence and the American Presidency from Washington to Bush*, HarperCollins, 1996, p. 469, ISBN: 9780060921781

Many Americans are unaware that our U.S. Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) was developed to spy on the American people; not for national defense. However, that being said, both the Vatican and the U.S. federal agencies agreed that the Pope's internal intelligence forces were better, quicker, and more efficient than anyone else.

The Catholic Church has had almost 1700 years of experience in political espionage (i.e. spying), overthrowing governments and deposing kings. This is not something that should be worn as a badge of honor, but rather, it is very condemning for those who claim to be "servants of Christ." Based on everything we have learned so far, it is no great surprise that intelligence agencies look to the Catholic Church as a shining example of political intrigue (i.e. secret planning) and espionage, especially when they have powerful political influence over many leaders all over the world.



United Nations Assistant Secretary General Robert Muller said:

*"I really wish that someday a book containing the U.N. speeches of the 2 Popes... might be published for worldwide distribution. The result would be a kind of Bible for modern times... The Holy See has become so close to the U.N. When I read documents emanating from the Holy See... I sometimes have the impression that I'm reading U.N. documents."*

-Robert Muller, U.N. Assistant Secretary General, *New Genesis: Shaping a Global Spirituality*, published by Doubleday, 1982, p. 192, ISBN: 9780385181235

Is there another city that is on seven hills, that is known for the colors of purple and scarlet, that is also known for a golden cup of abomination, that has committed spiritual fornication and ruled over the kings of the earth to a greater degree than the Roman Catholic Church? Nothing else comes even remotely close. The evidence for "reigning over the kings of the earth" is overwhelming, but the next point will drive the final nail in the coffin.

### 3. The Great Whore is a Harlot Who Fornicates with Kings

*And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.*

*-Revelation 17:6*

Please do not misunderstand the use of the word 'admiration' here, because it is often today taken to mean great love and respect; the word also can be used to mean wonder with disapproval, being appalled at wrongdoing in a mixture of horror and amazement, and that is the context in which it is used in this verse. An apostle of Christ would never love and respect those drenched in the blood of the saints of God, and the admiration he had was a wonder that this woman, appearing to be calm and gentle outwardly, would be riding comfortably atop such a vicious beast, seemingly enjoying herself as she slaughtered countless victims.

As we covered in chapter eight on the subject of the Inquisition, the Catholic Church is well-known for being drunk with the blood of the born again saints of God. Just because the Catholic Church has somewhat eased up on its oppressive rule after they lost some of their power in the 19th century, that does not mean their "Mother Church" is not thirsty for more blood from God's elect.

In chapter eight, I briefly mentioned Mary Tudor, Queen of England from 1553 to 1558, who was a dedicated follower of the Catholic Church. This was a time of great persecution against the born again Christians at the hand of the Catholic Inquisitors, and Mary followed the lead of the wicked popes of Rome by executing born again Christians, earning herself the nickname "Bloody Mary."

For example, in 1555, John Hooper was imprisoned by Bloody Mary on the grounds that he owed her money, even though he did not owe her anything; it was just an excuse she made up to imprison him. (i.e. Governing leaders have to give the public an excuse for what they do, otherwise, they rise up against their wicked leaders.) The real reason she had Hooper rounded up was because he refused to preach the sacraments of the Eucharist in the Catholic mass, so they arrested him and threw him into a sewer dungeon, filled with an almost unimaginable foul-smelling sewage, and due to his filthy prison cell, he contracted many illnesses over the course of the next five months.

Hooper was called before a Catholic council of bishops:

*"The bishop of Winchester urged Hooper to forsake the 'evil and corrupt doctrine,' as he called it... and to return to the unity of the Catholic Church and acknowledge the pope as head of that church... If Hooper would bow to the pope's holiness, Winchester assured him that he would receive the pope's blessing, and the Queen's mercy... Hooper answer that inasmuch as the pope taught doctrine that was altogether contrary to the doctrine of Christ, he was not worthy to be head of the church, and so he would in no way give in to any such illegal authority. Further, he said, the Roman Catholic Church is not the true Church at all. The true Church only hears the voice of her spouse and flees from the voice of strangers. 'However,' he said, 'if there is any point that I don't know about in which I have offended the queen's majesty, I will most humbly submit myself to her mercy,'... The bishop answered that the queen would show no mercy to the Pope's enemies."*

-John Foxe, *The New Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Bridge Logos Foundation, 2001, p. 152, ISBN: 9780882708751

Indeed, Bloody Mary ordered Hooper's execution because he would not bow to the Pope of Rome. Based on the eye-witness reports, here are his last moments while being burned alive:

*"Hooper prayed in a somewhat loud voice, 'Lord Jesus, have mercy upon me. Lord Jesus, have mercy upon me. Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.' These were the last words he was heard to speak. But even when his mouth was black and his tongue swollen, his lips could still be seen moving in prayer until they shrunk back into his gums. During these moments, Hooper struck repeatedly at his chest, or heart, with his hands until one of his arms fell off, and then continued striking his chest with the other hand while fat, water, and blood spurted out his fingertips. When the flames suddenly flared up in great power, Hooper struck his chest only once more as his strength gave out and his hand stuck to the iron band around his chest. At the same moment, his body fell forward against the band and he gave up his spirit."*

-John Foxe, *The New Foxe's Book of Martyrs*, Bridge Logos Foundation, 2001, p. 162, ISBN: 9780882708751

Never in history has a vile, antichrist pope ever given up himself for the sake of Christ like Hooper did. Never did those lofty bishops sacrifice themselves for the sake of the people as Christ did because they are far too busy commanding their minions to polish their finely crafted crowns.

Another example is John Rogers, who, for a time, was a servant of William Tyndale, one of the translators that preceded the King James Bible translators. After growing in knowledge of God's Word in English, Rogers sanctified himself from the Pope of Rome, knowing that popish throne to be that of an antichrist. Rogers was permitted to preach the truth of God's Word after King Edward the VI (1547-1553) kicked the Pope out of England, but once Bloody Mary took the throne, the wicked bishops of Rome started hunting Christians in England again, and Rogers was one of their victims. (See *The Great Apostacy; Or, the Church of Rome Proved to be Not the Church of Christ*, Hamilton, Adams & Company, 1839, p. 465-466, [The British Library])

After being called to preach in a building where there were many Catholic bishops, teaching that the people should abstain from all which had to do with the wicked Roman Pontiff, the bishops addressed Rogers during his preaching, but his answer with the Scripture embarrassed them in front of a viewing audience. As soon as Bloody Mary issued a decree to stop all Biblical preaching, Rogers was arrested, and thrown in a prison reserved for murderers and thieves.

(Read "[Should Christians Submit to Governing Authority?](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

Rogers was sentenced to execution, and here's how the conversation went between Rogers and the bishop under whose authority he was held captive:

**"ROGERS RESPONDING TO HIS CHARGES:** *Well, my lord, here I stand before God and you, and all this honourable audience, I take him to witness, that I never wittingly [with full knowledge; deliberately] or willingly taught any false doctrine; and therefore have I a good conscience before God and all good men. I am sure that you and I shall come before a judge that is righteous, before whom I shall be as good a man as you: and I nothing doubt but I shall be found there a true member of the true catholic church of Christ [lower case 'c' catholic church means "whole" or "universal," which is separate from the captical 'C' Catholic Church, which is a corporate entity of Rome], and everlastingly saved. And as for your*

false church, you need not to excommunicate me from it. I have not been in it these twenty years, the Lord be thanked therefor. But now you have done what you can, my lord, I pray you yet grant me one thing.

**BISHOP:** What is that?

**ROGERS:** That my poor wife, being a stranger [foreign to the area], may come and speak with me so long as I live. For she hath ten children that are hers and mine, and I would somewhat counsel her, what were best for her to do.

**BISHOP:** No, she is not thy wife.

**ROGERS:** Yes, my lord, and has been these eighteen years.

**BISHOP:** Should I grant her to be thy wife?

**ROGERS:** Choose you whether you will or not, she shall be so nevertheless.

**BISHOP:** She shall not come at thee.

**ROGERS:** Then I have tried out all your charity. You make yourself highly displeased with the matrimony of priests [i.e. the Catholic Church prevents priests from marrying], but you maintain open concubinage [not a wife; a mistress living with a man in fornication]: as in Wales, where every priest has his concubine openly dwelling with him, even as your holy father [the Pope] suffers all the priests in Holland and in France to do the like."

(See *The Great Apostacy; Or, the Church of Rome Proved to be Not the Church of Christ*, Hamilton, Adams & Company, 1839, p. 467, [The British Library])

In short, the Catholic Bishop refused to acknowledge the marriage between Rogers and his wife, but lived in hypocrisy by openly keeping whores in their homes, living in fornication. Sadly, that evil spirit of Rome has seeped its way into typical church buildings, where marriages are not recognized unless approved by a "pastor," even though Scripture gives no such commandment or implication.

(Read "[The Biblical Understanding of Weddings & Marriage](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

After being imprisoned a lengthy time, Rogers was taken before a priest named Bonner, and he made one request to Bonner:

"And Bonner asking him what that should be, 'Nothing,' said he, 'but that he might talk a few words with his wife before his burning.' But that could not be obtained of him! [i.e. the Catholic priest refused] Now when the time came, that he, having been delivered to the sheriffs, was brought out of Newgate to Smithfield, the place of his execution, Master Woodroofe, one of the sheriffs, calling Master [i.e. the word is used in the sense of a teacher] Rogers to him, asked him if he would revoke his abominable doctrine, and his evil opinion of the sacrament of the altar. Master Rogers answered and said, 'That which I have preached I will seal with my blood.' 'Then,' said Master Woodroofe, 'thou art an heretic.' 'That shall be known,' replied Rogers, 'at the day of judgment.' 'Well,' said Master Woodroofe, 'I will never pray for thee.' 'But I will pray for you,' rejoined Rogers."

(See *The Great Apostacy; Or, the Church of Rome Proved to be Not the Church of Christ*, Hamilton, Adams & Company, 1839, p. 468, [The British Library])

As he was held prisoner, riding in a carriage on the way to his execution, Rogers passed by his wife and ten children. He saw them, and they saw him. I am sure you can imagine the reaction of his family upon seeing him carried away to his death. However, their faces did not dissuade him from his dedication to the Lord Jesus Christ (i.e. Rogers trusted in the Living God to care for his family), and even though papers were brought for him to sign, which would be a confession of allegiance to the Pope of Rome in exchange for his life, Rogers stood firm on the Word of God, and was executed by the Great Whore who bathes in the blood of the saints of God.

He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

-Matthew 10:37

Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

-2 Timothy 3:12

I provided many more example of this in [chapter eight](#) on the Inquisition. The point has already been clearly made that the Catholic Church, and her vicious popes, have always hated the born again saints of Christ, and even though the Catholic Church tries to create their own version of "saints," they are false preachers (as they have always been) who drink the blood of the true saints of Christ from the a golden cup of devils.

To summarize, the Great Whore riding atop the beast has the following four descriptions:

- 1. She is a City on Seven Hills**
- 2. She Dresses in Purple & Scarlet with a Golden Cup in Hand**
- 3. She is a Harlot Who Fornicates with Kings and Reigns Over Them**
- 4. She is Drunk with the Blood of the Saints**

There is no other entity in this world that better and more accurately fits all these descriptions than the Catholic Church. This is not to say that the final antichrist, the son of perdition, will be Catholic, but that son of perdition will claim the ecumenical seat of Rome in one way or another, and it is this Great Whore who will control the beast in the final days; therefore, I urge all Christians not to worry, or be troubled, but to be watchful, and to preach the truth of God's Word on a strong foundation of Christ until the Day of Judgment.

*I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom; Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables. But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.*

-2 Timothy 4:1-5



## #12 – A Final Message for Catholics

If any Catholic might have read to this point, I would like you to look carefully at the following image which I took from its official website, which consists of altars, emblems, and other decorative furniture that was all made using the bones of the dead. Why am I showing you this? Because **this is an official Catholic Church**. It is called the Sedlec Ossuary, which was originally a building used to bury people, but over the course of a few hundred years, it was turned into a structure decorated with the bones of 40,000 people, and to this day, Eucharistic services are held there:



(See Sedlec Ossuary, "Photo Gallery," retrieved Sept 11, 2018, [sedlecoassuary.com/sedlec-ossuary-pictures])

Do people honestly believe that this is representative of the doctrine of Jesus Christ? Sadly, many Catholics, eager and desperate to justify themselves, would say 'yes'.

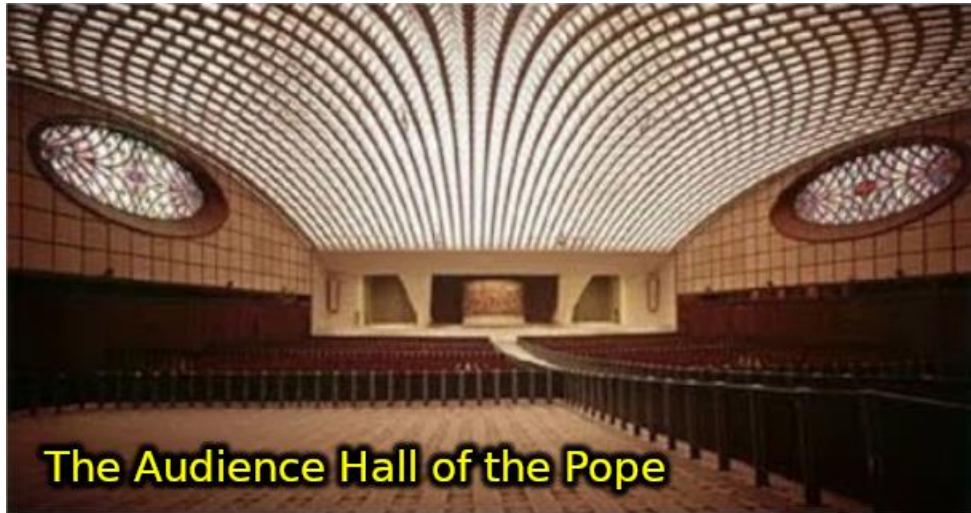
*But he that sinneth against me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate me love death.*  
-Proverbs 8:36

The following image is from a celebration of "Santa Muerte," or "Saint Death" in Mexico:



These are Catholics, and these events are promoted and supported by the Catholic Church. If this were truly of God, then why do they love and worship death?

The following image is the official audience hall of the Catholic Pope, and you will notice that it has been purposefully designed to look like a serpent. This is not trick photography or a wide-angle lens; this is exactly how it was built:



**The Audience Hall of the Pope**

*Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?*  
-Genesis 3:1

*And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,*  
-Revelation 20:2

At the very center of that audience hall, right between the two teeth, where the tongue of the snake would be, is the seat of the Roman Pontiff. So who is the mouth piece for the Devil?



**The Pope's Throne in the Audience Hall**

The Catholic Church claims this back drop is Jesus rising from an olive tree in a "nuclear explosion," and I am not saying that as just for some poetic description. The original artist, Pericle Fazzini, said:

*"Suddenly there came to me the idea of Christ preaching peace for 2,000 years and the place where he prayed for the last time: the olive grove of Gethsemane. I had the idea of depicting Christ as if he were rising again from the explosion of this large olive grove, peaceful site of his last prayers. Christ rises from this crater torn open by a nuclear bomb; an atrocious explosion, a vortex of violence and energy."*

-Pericle Fazzini, quoted by Stafannel B. Morris, "What is the Vatican Throne?" Pope2Your.net, May 29, 2019, retrieved Apr 24, 2021, [https://www.pope2you.net/what-is-the-vatican-throne]

However, that is not what it looks like to the rest of us. To us, it looks like a man who is rising up in control over the torture of the souls of the dead, and it looks that way on purpose because this design began in 1965, and it took *TEN YEARS* to finish designing before it was constructed.

In fact, there is evidence to say that this person in the middle of the back drop is Satan, not Christ. If you look carefully at the head of the person, you will notice that a serpent is seen in almost every angle, and again, the artists did this on purpose; this was no accident:



Why am I showing readers these things? Because there is a lot of symbolism in the Catholic Church, despite the fact that we Christians were instructed not to use such symbolism ([Acts 17:29](#)), and that symbolism will show you who the real leader of the Catholic Church is.

**(HINT: It is NOT Jesus Christ!)**

(Read "[Christian Symbols Are Not Christian](#)" here at [creationliberty.com](http://creationliberty.com) for more details.)

Over the years, I have often been accused of being "anti-Catholic," which is quick, one-liner response Catholics are taught to use against anyone who objects to anything the Catholic Church says or does. Despite the lies spoken against me, I am not anti-Catholic, I am pro-truth, specifically the truth of God's Word, and I am anti-error and anti-lies.

If Catholics would confess their errors and lies, having godly sorrow (i.e. repentance) of all their wicked deeds and traditions, like transubstantiation, the Eucharist, the false authority of popes, works-based doctrines, purgatory, indulgences, and every other sin and crime that is bred in Catholicism over the past 1700 years of their abominations, then I would have no problem with the Catholic Church, but it was founded with a corrupt root, and according to the doctrine of Christ, they cannot become good; rather, it will only get worse with time.

*And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.*

*-Matthew 3:10*

*Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.*

*-Matthew 7:15-20*

As a Catholic (or Anglican, or Eastern Orthodox, or any other flavor in between), if you do not repent (i.e. have grief and godly sorrow of wrongdoing) for your sin, and come to the Lord Jesus Christ through faith in His grace alone, you will *NOT* enter the Kingdom of God, and will end up in hell after you face the judgment of God. After reading this book, if you still want to claim that the wicked traditions of the Catholic Church are "Christian," then I have no choice but to say that you are anti-Christ because you are against all that is of Christ, and I plead with you that, for the sake of your soul, to pray to the Lord God that He would give you repentance to acknowledge the truth.

(Read "[Is Repentance Part of Salvation?](#)" here at creationliberty.com for more details.)

*In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.*

-2 Timothy 2:25-26

*And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth [i.e. the Bible], that they might be saved.*

-2 Thessalonians 2:10

*Sanctify them [i.e. divide them apart to a holy use] through thy truth: thy word [i.e. the Bible] is truth.*

-John 17:17

A priest cannot save you. Mary cannot save you, and she has never heard a single prayer from anyone. Jesus even said the prayers you say in vain repetition (e.g. Hail Marys, Our Fathers, etc) are *NOT* heard:

*But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.*

-Matthew 6:7

There is only one way to come to the Father, and that is through Jesus Christ alone, in faith of His grace alone:

*Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.*

-John 14:6

*For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;*

-1 Timothy 2:5

**ASK YOURSELF: "Am I following the Word of God, or the traditions of men?"**

The Bible tells us that the traditions of men nullify the effect of God's Word on the hearers, and that many men will seek to turn you rotten through their traditions.

*Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.*

-Matthew 15:6

*Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.*

-Colossians 2:8

**ASK YOURSELF: "If I follow the Word of God, have I proved it?"**

A Catholic is taught that the traditions of the Catholic Church come from the Word of God, but that is not the truth. Did you go to the Word of God and prove the Scripture by reading/studying it for yourself?

Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.

-1 Thessalonians 5:21

And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither went into the synagogue of the Jews. These were more noble [virtuous, excellent] than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

-Acts 17:10-11

**ASK YOURSELF: "Do I trust in God the Father, or a priest I call 'father'?"**

The Lord Jesus Christ gave His followers specific instructions to not call men "father" in the spiritual sense, which is what the Catholic Church teaches. God also taught us that, concerning His Word, those who put their trust in men have departed from God.

And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.

-Matthew 23:9

Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD.

-Jeremiah 17:5

Are you going to a priest for spiritual help by saying "forgive me father, for I have sinned?" Or, are you going the Lord Jesus Christ in prayer, and praying directly the Heavenly Father for your sin?

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.

-Matthew 6:9

**ASK YOURSELF: "Do I believe I can earn my way to heaven through works/suffering?"**

The Bible makes it clear that no man can enter heaven by their own efforts. One can only enter the Kingdom of God through the free gift of the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and Jesus only offers that gift of grace to those who repent (i.e. grief and godly sorrow) in humility for their sin and believe on His one-time blood sacrifice payment for their sins forever.

That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

-Ephesians 2:7-10

The salvation we receive from Christ leads us to do good works, and live according to His commandments, not the other way around. Works do not lead us to salvation. In chapter three on the Mass/Eucharist, we saw that the Catholic Church teaches that the priests offer sacrifices on an almost daily basis, but the Lord God has told us that can NEVER take away sins.

And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: But this man [i.e. Jesus Christ], after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool.

For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.

-Hebrews 10:11-14

**ASK YOURSELF: "Am I unwilling or nervous to question the Catholic Church?"**

If there is unwillingness, then there is the sin of pride, and if there is a nervousness, that is a fear of man that is not of God, which brings a snare.

The fear of man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the LORD shall be safe.  
-Proverbs 29:25

Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?  
-2 Corinthians 13:5

For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.  
-1 Corinthians 11:31

The reason the Catholic Church teaches so many false doctrines is because they have the devilish spirit of Rome in them, which drives continually towards an ecumenical end, which is a one-world religious dictatorship under the Pope's heavy rule. In the end, despite what some Catholics want to claim, the Catholic Church teaches and believes that all men are destined for heaven despite their beliefs, and that no one will end up in hell, as Pope John Paul II stated in *Redemptoris Missio*:

"The Church's universal mission is born of faith in Jesus Christ, as is stated in our Trinitarian profession of faith: 'I believe in one Lord, Jesus Christ, the only Son of God, eternally begotten of the Father... For us men and for our salvation he came down from heaven: by the power of the Holy spirit he became incarnate from the Virgin Mary, and was made man.' The redemption event brings salvation to all, 'for each one is included in the mystery of the redemption and with each one Christ has united himself forever through this mystery.' It is only in faith that the Church's mission can be understood and only in faith that it finds its basis... Newness of life in him is the 'Good News' for men and women of every age: all are called to it and destined for it. Indeed, all people are searching for it, albeit at times in a confused way, and have a right to know the value of this gift and to approach it freely."

-John Paul II, *Redemptoris Missio: On the permanent validity of the Church's missionary mandate*, Vatican Archives, retrieved Aug 28, 2018, [https://bit.ly/1QXMWUO]

The Bible tells us that all people are *NOT* searching for God and Christ; in fact, the Bible tells us *NO ONE* searches for Him. The Lord God has to come to us in our helpless state and give us understanding, and He does that only with those who are humble of heart:

As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.  
-Romans 3:10-12

But he giveth more grace. Wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.  
-James 4:6

In addition to that, there are *MANY* who will call Jesus "Lord," but will not enter the Kingdom of God:

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.  
-Matthew 7:21

These people would not listen to the commandments and doctrine of Christ, but they would listen to a priest or pastor fill them with the traditions of men. Therefore, when they approach Christ and try to justify themselves, they will give Him a long list of their works, which they believed would grant them entrance to heaven, but He will turn them away:

*Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.*  
-Matthew 7:22-23

If any reader wants to learn more about those verses, I recommend another book I have (which is free-to-read at creationliberty.com) called *Why Millions of Believers on Jesus Are Going to Hell*. On the day of God's final judgment, many people (including Catholics) will claim to know Christ, and call Him "Lord," but their names are not written in the book of life, and they will be cast into the lake of fire which burns for all eternity, never to escape, not because they did not do enough work, but because they did not trust in Jesus Christ alone.

*And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.*  
-Revelation 20:15

However, there is a major contradiction because whereas the general teaching of the popes of Rome is that hell does not exist, and that all will be saved in the end via purgatory, other major Catholic organizations, like the founder of *Catholic Answers*, a very popular Catholic publication, who says that no one can be sure if they have salvation:

*"Do I have a particular assurance of salvation or damnation or what? The answer a Catholic would have to give is: No. And the Catholic position is that an assurance of salvation is not possible."*

-Catholic Layman Karl Keating, founder of *Catholic Answers*, Debate between Peter Ruckman and Karl Keating, Bayview Baptist Church, retrieved Aug 28, 2018, [youtu.be/6yWc1C-fxw0?t=8m]

I agree with his statement that Catholic assurance of salvation is impossible, and that is because they base it on their own works, or rather, their imaginary "inner goodness." Under a system where you have to earn your way to heaven, no one knows how much work has to be done to get there, and thus, stating that Catholics have no assurance is, at the very least, an honest answer from the Catholic perspective; however, we who are the born again children of God, know that we have eternal life, and have a definite assurance of it:

*These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.*  
-1 John 5:13

*For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.*  
-Romans 8:38-39

These Catholic leaders (e.g. priests, bishops, popes, and all other flavors in between) have no trust in Jesus Christ, and therefore, they will *NOT* the Kingdom of God, but nonetheless, they travel across land and sea in search of converts to their religion, to make the next generation far more the children of hell than themselves; meanwhile, they take money from widows, make grand sanctimonious prayers to be seen among men. In short, these men will not enter Heaven on the Day of Judgment, and they will not allow anyone else to enter either, which is precisely what happened to the scribes and Pharisees in the days of Christ:

*But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence [for show] make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass [travel] sea and land to make one proselyte [convert to a religion], and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.*  
-Matthew 23:13-15

The Pharisees were seen by the general public to be moral and upstanding men who served God, which is exactly how Catholic priests are generally viewed by the public today, and yet, Christ rebuked the Pharisees, just as we Christians preachers rebuke the Catholic priests. But sadly, the grand majority of Catholics will not believe what I tell them, nor search out the matter to find the truth because they cling to the Devil and his Roman religion:

*Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.*

-John 8:44-45

Of course, most Catholics will be offended by that statement, claiming that they believe on Jesus, and likewise, claiming that they are not of the devil. However, those Catholics typically have no understanding of these verses, and do not realize that when Jesus said this, He was speaking to a whole crowd of people who believed on Him:

*Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*

-John 8:31-32

After Jesus told them they were of their father the devil, they picked up stones to kill Him. This means that a whole crowd of people who believed on Jesus also tried to kill him, and that is food for thought.

A few Catholics may be willing to question certain aspects of their religion, and maybe even seek out the truth of the matter in Scripture, but they still fear men, specifically their friends and family. Since most Catholics grow up around other Catholics, anyone who departs from the Catholic Church for the Word of God is generally shunned, and I have heard many sad testimonies from born again Christians of it happening in their families; however, Jesus told us we were to love God more than anyone or anything:

*And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.*

-Mark 12:30

*For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. And a man's foes shall be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.*

-Matthew 10:35-37

The last estimate I remember hearing is that approximately 20-25% of the world's population is Catholic, which is somewhere between 1.5 to 2 billion people, and most Catholics are unwilling to believe, or even to consider, how so many people could be deceived.

*And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world:*

-Revelation 12:9

Again, I remind Catholics that there is a very narrow path to Christ and eternal life. Narrow means that it is not very wide; it is specific, and there is no room to stray, but the path and gates to hell are wide open that many would go in:

*Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.*

-Matthew 7:13-15



If any priest comes to you and tells you many people are going to heaven, and that few or no one is going to hell, then that is a false teacher, a false prophet, trying to appear good on the outside, but they are inwardly full of corruption and wickedness.

*But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.*

-2 Peter 2:1

*Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres [tombs], which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness.*

-Matthew 23:27

*Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked... As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.*

-Revelation 3:17-19

As I said before, the Pharisees were well-respected in society, much like Catholic priests. They were thought to be righteous, upstanding citizens, and devout religious men, just as Catholics are typically viewed by the media and our culture, but in reality, they are inwardly corrupt, full of wickedness and abominations, thinking they are in need of nothing, which is why Christ rebuked the Pharisees, and that is also why we rebuke Catholics, that some might hear and be saved.

*The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life; and he that winneth souls is wise.*

-Proverbs 11:30

God warns us that false teachers will have an outward appearance of godliness, but inwardly, they deny the power (i.e. authority) of God, and that we are turn away from such people. The Bible tells us that they spend a lot of their time in learning and study, increasing their education, but they can never come to know the truth of the Word of God because they do not have the Holy Ghost to help them understand:

*Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.*

-2 Timothy 3:4-7

*But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.*

-1 Corinthians 2:14

The blind priests are leading the blind laity, speaking flattering words about Jesus Christ, but their hearts are far from Him:

*This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me.*

-Matthew 15:8

*And he spake a parable unto them, Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch?*

-Luke 6:39

There can be only one truth; there cannot be multiple truths. The Bible and the Catholic Church cannot both be right; there are too many contradictions. Someone is wrong, and our souls are at stake in this battle for truth, so this subject should be handled with seriousness, and I urge Catholics to take it seriously.

It is my prayer that by my efforts to write this book, at least one Catholic might be led to conversion and salvation by the Lord Jesus Christ after reading it. If any of you who are born again in Christ were helped by this work, then please share it with others that, God willing, one more can come to repentance and be saved by the pure teaching of God's Word to lost souls in the Catholic Church.

*Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.*

*-Isaiah 1:18*

*The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.*

*-2 Peter 3:9*

*Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing.*

*-2 Corinthians 7:9*

*And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.*

*-John 10:4-5*

*My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.*

*-John 10:27-28*